

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

E. Bruce Price

Tenth Edition

2005

www.maranathamedia.com.au

Contents Page

1. Working for Jehovah's Witnesses
2. Soul Winning Methods and Techniques
3. The History of the Watchtower Society
4. The Authority of the Watchtower Society
5. Jehovah's Prophet
6. False Prophecies
7. Altered & Discarded Teachings
8. The 1914 Date
9. The 1925 Date and Beth-Sarim
10. The 1975 Date
11. Chronology
 - Babylonian Chronology
 - Watchtower Chronology & Scholarship
 - The Astronomical Diary VAT 4956
12. The Second Coming of Christ
13. Parousia
14. The Millennium (Thousand Years)
15. Christ's Bodily Resurrection & Return
16. Man's Condition in Death
17. The Trinity
18. The Divine Names
19. The Only True God
20. The Deity of Jesus Christ
21. Is God More Than One Person?
22. The Personality of the Holy Spirit
23. Objections to the Trinity
24. Salvation
25. The 144,000 - Heavenly Class
26. The Memorial Service
27. War & Alternative Military Service
28. Attitudes to Governments
29. The Ten Commandments
30. The Sabbath
31. The Days of Creation
32. The Cross or "Torture Stake"?
33. Vaccinations & Blood Transfusions
34. Giving to Charities
35. Birthdays, Christmas, Mother's Days etc
36. Appendix

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

Preface

One of Jehovah's Witnesses, (then known as Bible Students) called on my mother in the late 1920's and began to share with her the teachings of the Watchtower Society. A warm friendship grew between the two. My mother was deeply impressed with the sincerity and zeal of this lady, but as time went on doubts began to grow concerning the organization she represented. The literature she brought to my mother was a mixture of Pastor Russell's publications. And those of the new society president, Judge Rutherford. These publications contradicted themselves. Russell's books taught that Christ returned in 1874 and the resurrection took place in 1878. Now Rutherford was changing these dates to 1914 for Christ's return and 1918 for the resurrection. The earlier publications had large sections outlining the pyramid prophecies which supported the 1874 and 1878 dates. The later editions "re-measured" the pyramid passages to prove the new 1914 and 1918 dates. However the End had not taken place in 1914 as predicted, nor had Christendom been destroyed in 1918 or the Republics disappear in 1920. Such false prophecies could not be hidden from sincere seekers after Truth. My mother became suspicious something was seriously wrong!

During this time Judge Rutherford had also printed the book, Millions Now Living Will Never Die, in which he had foretold the end to come in 1925 and the Princes to be resurrected back on the earth. Details of exactly what was going to happen after 1925 was given in the book, The Way to Paradise . It even outlined how one would be able to call up Abraham and the other Princes in Jerusalem and make application to have loved ones resurrected. (See the Appendix for photocopies of these statements). However, this date had also passed, - to the further disappointment of the Bible Students. Finally in 1929, Judge Rutherford built the Beth Sarim mansion, for the long over due Princes. It was not built in Jerusalem but in Diego, California, with Judge Rutherford moving into it! By now my mother realized that if she was going to find the Truth she would have to look elsewhere. This was not God's organization!

A few years later Mother felt she had at last found the Bible Truth that she was looking for, and she joined the Seventh-day Adventist church. For the rest of her life she worked zealously to share with family and friends these truths. She had no doubt that they were the people described in the last days before Christ's Return: "Here are they that keep the commandments of God and the faith of Jesus. And I looked, and behold a white cloud, and upon the cloud one sat like unto the Son of Man." (See Revelation 14:12-15)

However, although my mother became a Seventh-day Adventist and never joined the Jehovah's Witnesses, she never lost her love and concern for them. From a small child she instilled in me this burden to work with pen and voice for these sincere and zealous people, who are perishing with bibles in their hands!

I view our friends, the Jehovah's Witnesses, as a special group of people. They are loyal to their organization, and sincerely follow what they are taught by the Watchtower Society. They did not become Jehovah's Witnesses because it is a popular organization. Most have made big sacrifices for it. Some have died for it. Among them, those needing a blood transfusion after being badly hurt in a car crash or a young mother hemorrhaging in child birth. Such sincere people deserve better than what the Watchtower Society teaches. They deserve Bible truth and every true Christian should share it with them.

In the forty five years of my ministry, I have seen thousands leave the teachings of the Watchtower Society. I have personally had the joy of witnessing the baptism of well over two hundred. These people have become very happy and dedicated Seventh day Adventists, where they have not only found Bible truth, but also friends, and a place where they could work for God. They are thrilled to once more be part of a vigorous organization, that is growing even much faster than the Watchtower Society. In 1975 both organizations had reached memberships over two million, but by 1997 while the Watchtower Society claimed just over five million members, Seventh-day Adventists had grown to well over nine million!

In 1968 the book, God's Channel of Truth - Is it the Watchtower? was published. In it I told the story and reasons why some Jehovah's Witnesses were baptized into the Adventist church. This book has now been translated in over twenty languages in over 300,000 copies. In 1973 I wrote the first edition of Our Friends: The Jehovah's Witnesses. Since then the Society suffered the 1975 date failure for the End of the world. When this false prophecy was added to those of 1874, 1878, 1914, 1915, 1918, 1920 and 1925, many took up the challenge with renewed vigor to show the Witnesses the errors of their organization and

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

thousands left. The Society which once was so sure it had the Truth and could withstand any challenge or investigation, now discouraged its people from reading any literature other than their own. Those leaving the Society were cut off so they could not reveal to others the errors they had found in it. Many Witnesses today still have grave doubts about the Society, but are fearful of being dis-fellowshipped and cut off from family and friends.

However, there are still those who count Truth more important than anything else and they are ready to still search for it. I pray that this publication will help them find salvation and Bible truth as it is centered in the Lord Jesus Christ, "For there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved." Acts 4:12

Eric Bruce Price

August 1997 Sydney, Australia

1. Working With Jehovah's Witnesses

Jehovah's Witnesses are known to be among the most hard working and sincere of all professed Christians. However they are also known as people who are perishing with Bibles in their hands! These special people need to be led to find Bible truth and salvation in Christ.

THE WATCHTOWER SOCIETY

The Watchtower Society of Jehovah's Witnesses has had a very interesting and unique history (see Chapter 3). It has been an organization that has made possibly more false prophecies and taught many erroneous doctrines (see Chapter 6) than any other professed Christian religion in the 20th Century. In one ten year period it was estimated that it changed or discarded 148 different prophecies, doctrines and teachings.

One unique teaching of the organization was that the Second Coming of Christ took place invisibly in 1874. Later this date was discarded for 1914. These dates were both "proved" by the Pyramid prophecies (see Chapter 7) which were also later discarded.

Prophecies were made for the End of the world such as 1914 and 1925, the last being in 1975 (see Chapters 8-10). Each time its members suffered disappointment and loss.

Of greatest concern are those doctrines which threaten life and the eternal salvation of its members.

DANGEROUS DOCTRINES

The Society teaches that there is a heavenly class of only 144,000 people (see Chapters 24-26). Among the 5,167,258 who claimed to be faithful Jehovah's Witnesses in 1996, only 8,757 professed to belong to this class. It is taught that only this heavenly class are to be "born again" and allowed to take the emblems of the Lord's death at the Memorial/Communion/Lord's Supper which is held once yearly near Easter.

However, the Bible teaches in John 3:3, 5 that unless a person is "born again" they cannot be saved or enter into the kingdom of God. Furthermore John 6:53-54 says that if a person does not "eat the flesh of the Son of man and drink his blood" which is the partaking of the emblems of the Lord's death, they will not be resurrected and/or have everlasting life.

This means nearly everyone (5,158,501 of the 5,167,258) who claimed to be one of Jehovah's Witnesses in 1996, had no hope of salvation and they are perishing with Bibles in their hands!

LIFE THREATENING DOCTRINES

One tragic teaching of the Society was when it for over twenty years forbade vaccinations (see Chapter 33). At the time diphtheria was epidemic. Many children of faithful Witnesses died. Years later the

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

Society admitted in their publications that there was no scriptural proof to condemn vaccinations and they were then permitted. (At the time the Watchtower leaders were being refused entry into foreign countries to conduct big assemblies unless they were vaccinated!) The same happened with organ transplants. In 1967 they were condemned as being cannibalistic. For thirteen years those needing transplants suffered and others died, then in 1980 the Society admitted -there is no Biblical command forbidding it! However, the Society in choosing to condemn blood transfusions has never relented. This teaching has continued to cost many faithful Witnesses their lives as they have been involved in accidents or other life-threatening situations where only a blood transfusion could save them.

GOD'S CHANNEL and "PROPHET"

The Watchtower Society makes the bold claim that it alone is God's Channel of Truth. Its members are thus expected to be loyal and submissive to it. (See Chapter 4)

Throughout its history the Society has claimed that Jehovah God gave it certain truths to proclaim and in 1972 it claimed that it was Jehovah's "Prophet" (See Chapter 5). This was despite all the false prophecies and erroneous teachings which they themselves had either changed or discarded entirely (See Chapters 6-10).

APOLOGIES

Has the Society apologized for its mistakes and the traumas suffered by its members? Few admissions or apologies have been made. In 1993 the Society published the book, "Jehovah's Witnesses - Proclaimers of God's Kingdom, in it some of the false prophecies and changed teachings were excused as "adjustments." On page 635 a half apology for teaching that they would go to heaven in 1914 stated: "We merely inferred it, and evidently erred."

To also excuse its many errors and "adjustments" the Society often quotes Proverbs 4:18: "But the path of the righteous ones is like the bright light that is getting lighter and lighter until the day is firmly established." (Emphasis mine) However, the Bible equates light with truth and darkness with error. This bright light is already truth not error that is getting lighter.

The Society taught for over forty years that the Great Pyramid in Egypt was "God's Stone Witness and Prophet" and that God had "designed" it. Then suddenly it was denounced as "Satan's bible, and not God's stone witness"! (See Chapter 7) That is not bright light getting brighter!

DIFFICULTIES

Jehovah's Witnesses are now urged not to read any material that the Society has not published and screened.

After the 1975 date failure, tens of thousands left the organization (see page 16) as they began to examine their history and discover other false prophecies and errors that had been taught over the past century. Many felt bitterly betrayed that the Society they believed taught truth had taught so much error. They photocopied, reprinted and shared from the old Watchtower publications that they had found. This caused a panic in the once confident organization that had in 1968 encouraged people: "to examine, not only what we personally believe, but also what is taught by any religious organization with which we may be associated. If we are lovers of the truth there is nothing to fear from such an examination" Truth p. 13.

In 1972 they had invited a "review" of their record to prove they were Jehovah's Prophet. The Watchtower p.197

After 1975 all that changed. By March 15, 1986 "The Watchtower" was warning their people to not read any literature other than that put out by themselves. They were not to even open it, but to destroy it immediately.

ADVANTAGES OF WORKING FOR WITNESSES

Jehovah's Witnesses are sincere people. They already believe in the inspiration of the Bible,

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

Baptism by immersion, Creation and a number of other doctrines believed by Seventh-day Adventists. When they accept further Bible truth they will continue to study it and follow it enthusiastically.

With prayer, patience, Christian friendship and love, these people may be won to Christ and enjoy happy fellowship in the Seventh-day Adventist church.

2. Soul Winning Methods

A. AS CO-LABOURERS WITH GOD.

1. God's Work is to: Convict, convert and finally judge. From the outset remember this and relax. All you have to do is the "sowing", the results or "reaping- are in His hands!

2. Our Work is to:

a. Be Loving. You will never win any soul that you do not love. Pray that God will help you to do just that, even when it is difficult, and it can be!

b. Be Concerned. They are perishing with Bibles in their hands! It is a matter of life and death that they accept Christ for their salvation and follow Bible truth. It is essential that you show this loving concern to them.

c. Be Sincere. They must have complete faith in you as a guide, example and friend if they are going to finally leave the Watchtower Society and all their friends.

d. Be Positive. Let them see that you are positive that you have Bible truth and the promise of eternal life now in Jesus Christ (1 John 5:11-13).

e. Always Remain Calm. If you lose your temper, you will lose everything. If they cannot or will not see your point, leave them to the Lord. Remember He had to deal with the original "Jehovah's Witnesses" (Isaiah 43:10) in His day, and they were more stiff-necked and frustrating than the group we have today. However, the words He lovingly spoke were remembered and under the mighty working of the Holy Spirit thousands accepted the Truth at a later date.

f. Never Argue. The Holy Spirit cannot work in that atmosphere. Calmly allow them to have their say on a certain point, and let them express themselves fully on it. Do not enter into what they are saying until they are finished. Then have your say, and they will then be more likely to listen to you and respect your rights to also be heard. If they say something you do not agree with, answer: 'What the Watchtower Society teaches on this point could be right, but from my understanding of the Bible, I believe it teaches so and so...' and present sound scriptural reasons in your answer.

9. Never Ridicule or Embarrass the Individual. They are not at fault. It is the Watchtower Society that has made the errors and mistakes. Do not say, "You teach" or "You believe" but rather The Society teaches or believed. Show love and sympathy towards the Witnesses, who you know to be sincere and lovely people. They have been deceived by the Society, and the blame is to be firmly but kindly laid at its feet.

B. THE WATCHTOWER SOCIETY

a. Its Authority. At the head of the organization is a small group of men who are believed to be of the 144,000 or "heavenly class", and it is their responsibility to channel God's truth for these last days to His people. Because of this fact, no article or book published by the Society has shown the name of the author, since the days of Judge Rutherford and Pastor Russell, who they also claim were God's Channel of Truth in the Watchtower Society. Thus the Witnesses are taught that what the Watchtower publishes is truth, and they enjoy looking forward to this continual flow-of "new light" in this manner, even though it often

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

contradicts "truths" it previously taught. The April 1, 1972, Watchtower magazine even made the bold claim, that it is "Jehovah's Prophet- for these last days. (See the article in Chapter 5, on page 9.) Thus one of the major problems in winning Jehovah's Witnesses is their faith in the authority of the Society. In reality they are more loyal to the Society than Roman Catholics are to the authority of the Pope. It is therefore essential to break their confidence in the Watchtower Society as a reliable spokesman for God, and their means of salvation. The Watchtower's mistakes and false prophecies are abundant, but the Witnesses are taught to love the Society and be loyal to it, so it often takes a lot of tactful and undeniable evidence to accomplish this task. When this is done you can then lead them to Christ for salvation. Acts 4:12, 1 John 5:11-13.

b. Show a Willingness to Learn from Them. Sometimes you can only study with a "mature" Witness on this basis. You then have to present your position by saying, "I would be very happy to be a Jehovah's Witness but these are my problems. I could not have faith in an organization that has made so many false prophecies or does not keep all of God's commandments. It teaches two Gods and not one true God. I would not be able to partake of the emblems of Christ's body, and so there would not be a resurrection for me." etc.

c. Loan Them Literature to Read. Do not give it. Loan them a book or paper and ask them to read it and tell you where it is wrong. If you give them literature they are likely to either burn it or not read it. With this approach, however, they will read and study it, if they think their answers will help you. Many have been won in this way, as they have studied out the issues, thinking they were helping another to find the Truth.

d. The Personal Doubts of Witnesses. Many Witnesses have secret doubts about some of the Society's teachings, although they will not admit to it. These doubts vary greatly with the different people. Some will be disturbed when they learn of false prophecies or changed teachings, whereas it will not worry others who are more concerned because they do not keep all of the commandments, or partake of the emblems of the Lord's Supper etc. Thus there is no rule as to which doctrine to commence with, to show them they have not all the truth. You must discover these yourself. As you do, be careful to avoid issues that they are personally dogmatic about, and build on those where the truth is beginning to dawn. For years the Society has emphasized that if one doctrine in an organization is wrong, then the whole is wrong.

a. Encourage Them to Investigate Their Own Teachings. Agree with them on the statement made in the Watchtower book, "The Truth That Leads to Eternal Life."(1968) page 13:

"We need to examine, not only what we personally believe, but also what is taught by any religious organization with which we may be associated. Are its teachings in full harmony with God's Word, or are they based on the traditions of men? If we are lovers of the truth, there is nothing to fear from such an examination." (emphasis supplied).

f. Know Their Teachings and Publications. It may be necessary to let the Witnesses give you a few studies or sessions to tell you briefly of their beliefs. Also get acquainted with their books and publications past and present.

Books which have been written by former Witnesses can also be helpful. However, some of these can be biased and even so bitter, their facts have been distorted because of personal hurts. One book that is of real value, however is, Crisis of Conscience by Raymond Franz. He was a member of the governing body, and his book is very factual.

C. DOCTRINES MOST HELPFUL IN WINNING JW'S

1. The Society's False Prophecies. "Believe it not" Matthew 24:24.
2. Chronology. The basis of the 1914 date is 19 years in error.
3. Commandments of God. God's people keep them all. Revelation 14:12. This includes the seventh-day

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

Sabbath.

4. Creation Days. It is unscriptural and impossible for each day to be a period of 7,000 years. See Genesis 1.
5. Godhead. There is only one true God - not two: an Almighty God and a Mighty God.
6. Salvation. Only those who are "born-again", can be saved, but in the Society only the 144,000 claim to be. Then it means the rest are lost. John 3:3, 5; Romans 8:6-14.
7. Lord's Supper/Memorial Service. There is no resurrection for those who do not partake of the emblems of Christ's body and blood. John 6:53, 54.
8. Christ's Second Coming/Presence/Parousia. This did not happen in 1914, but is still future.
9. Signs of the Second Advent. These show that Christ's Coming is near not here. Matthew 24:33.
10. The New Jerusalem. It is a literal city which comes to this earth, where the wicked surround it. Revelation 20:5, 9; 22:15.
11. Millennium. "The rest of the dead" do not live until the 1,000 years has ended. They are not resurrected during it. Revelation 20:5.
12. Organization. Not all are to be ministers, teachers etc. All have different gifts to use for God, as they bear witness to Him. 1 Corinthians 12:12-20, 27-30.
13. Attitude to Rulers and Those in Authority. This has improved since early 1960s when this teaching was changed. However, honor is still not given to those to whom honor is due. Romans 13:1, 2, 7; 1 Peter 2:13-18.
14. War Question. While in times of war or peace, Christians are not to kill, they are still to follow Christ's example of doing a work of healing, even to those involved. See Luke 7:2-10.
15. Blood Transfusions. The WT teaching is unscriptural. A transfusion is not eating blood, or it would be given by the mouth. On the other hand to refuse a life-saving measure could be the same as breaking the commandment "Thou shall not kill" or commit suicide.

D. SOUL-WINNING AIDS

1. The Use of Watchtower Publications. Since most JW'S will only use and accept Watchtower publications, it is essential to know and use them. You should underline and index at the back of each publication, passages of interest for future reference.
 - a. Old Publications. These are now very difficult to obtain but this kit has some photos tat copies of portions of some of the most useful. Many J.W'S have never seen these old books, and have no idea what they contain. This includes their false prophecies as well as previous teachings such as the Pyramid Prophecies, the 6,000 years ending in 1872, (they now teach it ended in 1975!), the Beth Sarim house for Abraham, Isaac etc. to occupy when they were to be resurrected after 1925 etc.

The Witnesses today are inclined to pass off their old publications with these false prophecies and teachings, as entirely irrelevant to the organization today, which they believe is continually getting brighter light. However, The Watchtower, April 1, 1972 has an article (included in this Kit) entitled, "They Shall Know a Prophet was Among Them", in which they claim to be Jehovah's Prophet and invite one to -review the record" since 1914, to prove their claim, that they worked under -angelic direction and support", and -

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

were directed from heaven." (Practically every Watchtower publication has been published or reprinted since 1914, including Pastor Russell's "Millennium Dawn" or "Studies in the Scriptures" series).

- b. New Publications. These are comparatively easy to obtain, and are essential to have. You need a copy of:
 - 1. The New World Bible.
 - 2. The Kingdom Interlinear Translation of the Greek Scriptures. This contradicts and clearly shows many errors in the NW.
 - 3. Babylon the Great is Fallen. For Chronology.
 - 4. Truth. Has interesting comments on the commandments.

Further publications are mentioned in this kit, and it is to your advantage if you can add them to your library.

2. Use Charts, Pictorial Aids etc. Display them as soon as possible and leave them up throughout the entire study or discussion. They will do much to re-orientate their Watchtower thought concepts, especially on the subject of the Millennium and Second Coming.

E. THE SUPERIORITY OF ADVENTIST WORK AND TEACHINGS.

- 1. Seventh-day Adventists are a faster growing organization. See comparison growth chart - chapter on 1975.
- 2. Seventh-day Adventists have Never Set Dates. The church was organized in 1863, and has emphasized Christ's warnings that dates were never to be set for, the end or Armageddon.
- 3. Adventists carry on a much more thorough world-wide work. They work in more places, with more languages as well as air over 7,000 weekly radio and TV programs in these languages, to every country in the world.
- 4. Adventists have more avenues for their members to work and witness. They recognize from 1 Corinthians 12 that all the members of Christ's body or congregation are different, and have different gifts. They work happily where they can use these gifts, such as in the following programs and outreaches: Door-to-door work, personal evangelism, welfare work, Sabbath Schools, Public evangelistic crusades, Radio-TV work, SHF work, Hospitals, Clinics, Youth work, Health and Temperance Programs, Foreign Mission etc.
- 5. Adventists have excellent facilities for children and youth. They have excellent programs in their church activities, and a church school program that can take children from Primary to University level.

F. SHOW WHY J.W'S CAN BECOME HAPPY SDA'S.

Some of the reasons why Jehovah's Witnesses can join the Seventh-day Adventist Church and become happy members is because they look for an organization that is:

- a. Bible centered.
- b. Strongly evangelistic.
- c. A growing organization.
- d. Working in all the world.
- e. Encourages but does not force its members to work and witness.
- f. They find above all else, Jesus Christ as their personal Savior.

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

3. The History of the Watchtower Society

GENERAL HISTORY

The history of the Watchtower Society is an interesting one. Could Christ have had it in mind when He warned that in the last days there would be false prophets?

1870. Pastor Russell began to study with date setting Second Adventists, who had set the date, 22nd October 1874 for the visible return of Christ.

1874. Christ did not come as expected. The group were disappointed.

1876. Pastor Russell convinced by N. H. Barbour that Christ did come in 1874 but it was invisible.

1877. Russell begins to teach publicly the 1874 date and 1878 is set for the literal resurrection of the saints, 1914 is set for the end of the world.

1878. Disappointment because no literal resurrection took place. It was then concluded that it did take place but it was invisible!

1879. Zion's Watchtower and Herald of Christ's Presence commenced on July 1.

1886. First volume of the Millennial Dawn series. (Called Studies in the Scriptures [SS] in 1904)

1914. Another date failure when they had not been taken to heaven by this date and the End/ Armageddon did not take place. (See Ch. 8)

1915. A further disappointment when Abraham Isaac etc. were not resurrected as predicted to take up the Kingdom on earth. (See p. 61)

1916. Pastor Russell died and went to heaven to direct the Society from there. (SS, Volume 7 p. 144) Judge J.F. Rutherford becomes the second president of the Watchtower Society.

1917. He releases The Finished Mystery Volume 7 of SS, It confirms the dates 1874 and 1878 and adds the 1918, 1920 and 1925 dates..

1918. Christendom and its churches were not destroyed as foretold in SS Volume 7 p. 485.

1920. The republics did not disappear in the fall of that year as foretold in SS Volume 7 p. 258. The book Millions Now Living Will Never Die, was published outlining how Abraham, Isaac and the Princes of Hebrews 11 would be resurrected and the Kingdom set up. (See pages 62-62)

1924. The book Way to Paradise published. In it a description is given of what would take place next year in 1925, and how people would call up Abraham in Jerusalem and arrange to have their loved ones resurrected. (See pages 65-67)

1925. Another major date failure when again what the Society had predicted failed to take place.

1927. Creation p.325 explains that the world had ended 'legally' in 1914. The Society also discovers that the Resurrection took place in 1918 and not in 1878. (Paradise p. 192)

1928. It is estimated that in the past ten years 148 points of doctrine or interpretations of scripture have been changed by the Watchtower Society. (Another Gospel, by Ray W. Johnson)

1929. The house Beth Sarim is built for the Princes who were expected in 1925. This is to cover up for that

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

date failure and ease the disappointment. The Princes will still come!

1930. Light Volumes 1 & 2 explain many new teachings. The events of Matthew 24 are now to be applied to the events after 1914 not before!

1931. The name Jehovah's Witnesses adopted. Vindication Volume 1 p. 338-339 admits the date failures of 1914, 1918 and 1925 caused disappointment. The Society now says it had 'learned to quit fixing dates for the future.'

1934. A new class, originally called Jonadabs was created of people who were not "born again" and would have an earthly not heavenly hope.

1935. Vaccinations condemned.

1942. Rutherford died of cancer at the Both Sarim mansion in San Diego, California, USA. He is succeeded by N. H. Knorr.

1945. About this time blood transfusions were for condemned.

1950. New World Translation of the Christian Greek Scriptures released. It was written by members of the Society, and is a biased translation which has added and altered many Bible texts to agree with Witness teachings.

1958. The Watchtower p.575, vaccinations are now permissible, but not blood transfusions.

1963. Babylon the Great Has Fallen! Misquoted Harper's Bible Dictionary to support the erroneous chronology of the Society. (See page 24)

1966. Baptisms are at an all time low so articles in the Watchtower and Awake magazines, and Life Everlasting in Freedom of the Sons of God, set a new date that End will come in 1975. This increases baptisms. (See pages 16 and 17)

1969. The Kingdom Interlinear Translation of the Greek Scriptures. It uses the Greek text revised by Westcott and Hort and has in its margin the New World translation. This reveals many errors and contradictions, including words added and other mistranslations. The Greek text used is also a very questionable one (See article on next page) 1972. Society claims it is "Jehovah's Prophet" (See Chapter 5)

1975. "The wicked world's end" does not come as expected. (See Chapter 10)

1977. N. H. Knorr dies after witnessing the devastating effect of the 1975 date failure. He is succeeded by Frederick W. Franz.

1978. The Society suffers a -1.4% membership loss as a result of the 1975 date failure. In 1974 it had enjoyed a 13.5% increase. (See page 16)

1983. Raymond Franz writes Crisis of Conscience which has a devastating effect on the Society, as it reveals many "inside" problems and errors.

1984. The Watchtower, May 15, features the article, '1914 - The Generation That Will Not Pass Away'

1995. The above teaching which has been the motivation of Witnesses for over fifty years is now discarded, by new light revealed in The Watchtower, November 1. (For further details see the article on the next page)

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

THE NEW WORLD BIBLE

The New World Translation of the Christian Greek Scriptures containing the 27 books of the New Testament, first appeared in 1950.

Concerning the translators of this Bible, Crisis of Conscience p. 50 says:

"The New World Translation bears no translator's name and is presented as the anonymous work of the 'New World Translation Committee.' Other members of that Committee were Nathan Knorr, Albert Schroeder and George Gangas; Fred Franz, however, was the only one with sufficient knowledge of the Bible languages to attempt translation of this kind. He studied Greek for two years in the University of Cincinnati but was only self-taught in Hebrew."

The master Greek text chosen was that of Westcott and Hort. These men have been described by conservative Protestants as both 'unbelievers' and "heretics".

They did not believe in Bible infallibility, New Testament miracles, Creation, Literal devil, Heaven, Second Coming, Christ's substitutionary death, or Inviting people to receive Christ as Savior.

Some of the things that they believed in were: Mary worship, purgatory, prayers for the dead, sacrament devotion, communism, in contacting demons, and decided between variant readings on the basis of their "inner consciousness". See their biographies by their sons (Hort 2:248)

They based their texts mainly on the Vaticanus and Sinaiticus manuscripts of the notorious fourth century, when Constantine had corrupted and changed copies of the Bible made to suit the apostasies which were entering into the Christian church at that time.

For instance it was Constantine who passed the first law changing the Sabbath of the 'commandment' to Sunday.

Thus Rev. 22:14 (KJV) was changed from:

"Blessed are they that do his commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the city"

... to read as it appears in the New World bible...

"Happy are those who wash their robes, that the authority to go to the trees of life may be theirs and that they may gain entrance into the city by its gates."

However, Tertullian (AD 200) Cyprian (AD 248-258) and Tertionius (AD 390) all quote Revelation 22:14 as "do his commandments". The first to use "wash their robes" was Athanasius, Bishop of Alexandria (AD 326-373)

Westcott and Hort rejected the Received Text which is based on 95% of the manuscripts in favor of the 5% such as the Vaticanus which leaves out words and whole clauses at least 1491 times and the Sinaiticus manuscript which was worse. Both manuscripts contained the Apocrapha which supports prayers for the dead.

THE 1914 GENERATION

For many years the Watchtower Society applied the words of Jesus in Matthew 24:34: "Truly I say to you that this generation will by no means pass away until all these things occur." To refer to the generation who were living in 1914:

"This generation is getting up in years now. A great number of them have already passed away in death. Yet Jesus very pointedly said: "This generation will by no means pass away until all these things occur. Some of them will still be alive to see the end of this wicked system. This means that only a short time is left before the end comes! (Psalm 90:10) So now is the time to take urgent action if you do not want to be swept away with this wicked system." YOU CAN LIVE FOREVER IN PARADISE ON EARTH, Page 154, 1988 Edition.

"The Watchtower" May 15, 1984 featured on its front cover a picture of elderly Witnesses with the caption, "1914 - The Generation That Will Not Pass A way". (See it on the back cover) In 1968 the Society in the Truth book p.95 was using this (see above) to urge the Witnesses to greater activity. This was their great argument that time was short!

As the years passed and the "1914 generation" were passing away, efforts had to be made to extend the starting age of the generation:

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

1968. The October 8, Awake p. 13-14 set the starting age at 15 or over

1980. The October 15, The Watchtower, p.31 reduced the starting age to 10 years of age.

1984. The May 15, The Watchtower, p.5, the starting age was reduced to new born babies!

By 1995, this "1914 generation" of those born in 1914 were now over 80 years of age, The Biblical lifetime - (not merely generation) of "threescore years and ten, and if by reason of strength they be fourscore years..." (Ps. 90: 10) had been exceeded. Once again the Watchtower Society was in trouble. What would they do?

1995. The November 1, The Watchtower, p. 17, announced: "The term 'generation' as used by Jesus refers principally to contemporary people of a certain historical period."

With this new "truth" and the urgency of the generation limitation gone, worldwide service hours in 1996 dropped by 10 million hours. In 1997 steps are being made to rectify this.

4. The Authority of the Watchtower Society

Throughout the history of the Watchtower Society, its presidents and Governing Body have wielded tremendous authority and control over the members. This has been accomplished by this small select group claiming to be the faithful and discreet slave class of Matthew 24:45-47. They not only claim to be "God's Channel of Truth" and His "spokesmen", but have even made the bold claim of being Jehovah's Prophet.

In his book, Crisis of Conscience (1983) Raymond Franz, the author, who was a former member of the Governing Body tells how this select group function:

"Not that we are the masters over your faith, but we are fellow workers for your joy, for it is by your faith that you are standing." -2 Corinthians 1:24.

"The above quoted statement of Paul repeatedly came into my mind during the nine years of my participation in the Governing Body of Jehovah's Witnesses. I could wish that all Witnesses might have the experience of participation. Perhaps then they could understand what words alone cannot convey.

To clarify what the Governing Body is:

Jehovah's Witnesses understand that Christ Jesus, as Head of the congregation, feeds and governs his congregation by means of a "faithful and discreet slave" class. This class is now composed of a remnant of the 144,000 persons anointed as heirs of Christ's heavenly kingdom. But from among such class there is a small number of men who act as a Governing Body and perform all administrative functions for the global congregation, not only for the present number of 9,500 "anointed ones" out of whom these men are drawn, but also for the more than two million other persons associated who are not considered to be among the heavenly heirs. It seemed an awesome responsibility for me when I became one of eleven members of the worldwide Governing Body in 1971 (the number later grew to as many as eighteen in 1977 and today stands at. . . "

We would urge our readers to add this book to their library. In it he tells of the way the lives of Jehovah's Witnesses are controlled by the Society. He also gives an insight into the tragedies the organization has caused by enforcing upon the members restrictions, and then altering such requirements. At all times members are expected to be loyal to the Society and submissive:

"Those who recognize Jehovah's visible theocratic organization, therefore, must recognize and accept this appointment of the "faithful and discreet slave" and be submissive to it." - The WATCHTOWER, page 590, 1967.

"Therefore, in submitting to Jehovah's visible theocratic organization, we must be in full and complete agreement with every feature of its apostolic procedure and requirements.

UNITY MAINTAINED BY SUBMISSION

"Do not fear that you might lose your identity or freedom by submission. Members of the first-century Christian congregation willingly submitted themselves to the direction of the organization through its governing body." -The WATCHTOWER, page 592, 1967.

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

THE FAITHFUL AND DISCREET SLAVE

Matthew 24:45, (NW) "Who really is the faithful and discreet slave whom his master appointed over his domestics, to give them their food at the proper time?"

For over a century the Watchtower Society has claimed to be that faithful servant:

"The WATCH TOWER BIBLE AND TRACT SOCIETY is the greatest corporation in the world, because from the time of its organization until now the Lord has used it as His channel through which to make known the Glad Tidings." - THE FINISHED MYSTERY, (1917) p.144.

The above claim was made even though 1914 and all that they had prophesied for it had failed to come to pass! (See the chapter on 1914). Sixty years later in 1977, at the masthead of The Watchtower magazine was the following claim:

"A watchtower enables a person to see far into the distance and announce to others what is coming. Can a magazine serve similarly in our day? Yes, from its first issue (July 1879) onward, The Watchtower, published by Jehovah's Witnesses, has done just that. November 15, 1977, Volume 98, Number 22.

This was made two years after 1975 had passed and left tens of thousands of faithful Witnesses so devastated they were leaving the organization! (See the chapter on 1975). It is still the cornerstone of the Society's teachings today:

"(Matthew 24:45-47) On his return in Kingdom power in the year 1914, did Christ find a "faithful and discreet slave" class providing spiritual "food," or information? Yes, he found such a "slave" made up of the remaining ones on earth of his 144,000 "brothers." (Revelation 12:10; 14:1-3) And since 1914 millions of persons have accepted the "food" they provide, and have begun practicing true religion along with them. This organization of God's servants is known as Jehovah's Witnesses." - You Can Live Forever In Paradise on Earth, (1982) p. 193.

HAS THIS SOCIETY BEEN FAITHFUL?

The Watchtower Society has always claimed to have been faithful in carrying out what it believes is its God-given commission. However, the history of the organization presents a very different picture. Its past is literally strewn with false prophecies and erroneous and discarded teachings. Truth should be built upon truth, but in the case of the Watchtower Society it has often been one error added to another.

Those who have joined the Society should have another look at it, and certainly those who have not yet joined. Since this organization makes such bold claims, every lover of Truth should investigate its history and teachings. When that is thoroughly done, there will be no doubt that it is numbered among those of whom Jesus warned: "Believe it not" Matthew 24:23-24.

5. Jehovah's Prophet

From: "The WATCHTOWER", APRIL 1, 1972, pages 197-200.

"JEROVAH GOD Is Interested In having people know him. Though he is Invisible to human eyes, he provides various ways by which they can know his personality. They can know what to expect from Him and what He expects of them.

One can come to understand that Jehovah is a God of surpassing wisdom by observing creation. This also reveals the loving care with which he designed things for man's welfare and enjoyment. A second way to know God Is through his Word of truth, the Bible. Herein one finds the full expression of Jehovah's purpose toward mankind-why man is on the earth and the blessings that God has in store.

A third way of coming to know Jehovah God is through his representatives. In ancient times he sent prophets as His special messengers. While these men foretold things to they also served the people by telling them of God's will for them at that time often also warning them of dangers and calamities. People today can view the creative works. They have at hand the Bible, but it is little read or understood, So, does Jehovah have a prophet to warn them of dangers to come?

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

IDENTIFYING THE PROPHET

These questions can be answered in the affirmative. Who is this prophet? The clergy of the so-called "Christian" nations hold themselves before the people as being the ones commissioned to speak for God. But as pointed out in the previous issue of this magazine, they have failed God and failed as proclaimers of His kingdom by approving a man-made political organization, the League of Nations (now the United Nations), as "the political expression of the Kingdom of God on Earth."

However, Jehovah did not let the people of Christendom, as led by the clergy go without being warned that the League was a counterfeit substitute for the real kingdom of God. He had a "prophet" to warn them. This "prophet" was not one man, but was a body of men and women.

It was the small group of footstep followers of Jesus Christ, known at that time as International Bible Students. Today they are known as Jehovah's Christian Witnesses. They are still proclaiming a warning, and have been joined and assisted in their commissioned work by hundreds of thousands of persons who have listened to their message with belief

Of course, it is easy to say this group acts as a "prophet" of God. It is another thing to prove it. The only way this can be done is to review the record. What does it show?

During the World War 1 period this group, the International Bible Students, was very active in preaching the good news of God's kingdom, as their Leader Jesus Christ had set this work before them in his prophecy at Matthew 24:14. They took literally Jesus' words to the Roman governor Pontius Pilate: "My kingdom is no part of this world." (John 18:36) They also took to heart Jesus' words to his followers: "You are no part of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world." They expected to suffer for living according to that rule, just as Jesus went on to say, "on this account the world hates you." (John 15:19) Hatred toward them grew into violence during World War 1.

These Bible Students had long been concerned with Ezekiel and his prophecy. In 1917 they published a book entitled "The Finished Mystery" explaining the book of Ezekiel as well as that of Revelation. This book was criticized by the clergy as false to the Word of Jehovah.

Notes on Page 197:

The claim on this page to be "Jehovah's Prophet" is plain and unmistakable. The thing however, that is even more remarkable is the invitation to review the record! That is the last thing the Watchtower Society should have done, with its history down through the years with failed dates, false prophecies and changed teachings! In this Kit we will be accepting the Society's invitation to review the record.

Notes on Page 198:

It is incredulous to read here that the Watchtower Society would even mention the book, The Finished Mystery, in connection with proving they are a prophet. See the list of false prophecies made in this book, which have been photocopied in this Kit.

Notes on Page 199:

On this page the Society claims- "It is significant that, in 1931, after twelve years of faithful service..."

In view of what transpired in those twelve years, from 1919 to 1931, one is staggered to read this claim! It was during these years that the 1925 date was set, through the book, Millions Now Living Will Never Die, and other publications, including The Way to Paradise. Excerpts from both of these books are included in this Kit at the back. When this date failed, thousands became discouraged and left the Society. Rather than be faithful and admit their mistake, the Society instead, built the house Beth Sarim as a cover-up!

Notes on Page 200:

Here the Society is claiming that what they are doing is under angelic direction and support. Then they go on to claim:

"And since no word or work of Jehovah can fail, for he is God Almighty, the nations will see the fulfillment of what these witnesses say as directed from heaven."

The Society was so sure of what was going to happen in 1975 they felt they could make this bold claim and challenge. Finally they claim:

"Jehovah is interested not only in the vindication of his own name, but also in vindicating his prophet."

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

These extravagant claims were made in 1972 when the Society was confident the End would come in 1975.

6. False Prophecies

One of the outstanding features of the Watchtower Society from its inception, has been its date-setting. The failure of these dates has been the cause of much anguish to its people, and huge losses in membership. The altering of its teachings has also caused embarrassment, and membership losses.

DATE-SETTERS

When Pastor C.T. Russell first associated with the group of date-setting Second Adventists, they were teaching Christ's Return was about to take place in October, 1874. Despite the fact that the time passed and they were disappointed, Russell continued to set dates, and this has become one of the features of the Watchtower Society. When one set of dates fail, and the Society has survived the trauma, then another set is made to replace them. The most recent date to be set was 1975, which just completed a century of date setting. When this date failed, thousands left the Society. For a few years after 1975, the Society lost more members than it gained, - see Chart with the section on 1975.

SEVENTH-DAY ADVENTISTS & DATE-SETTING

By the time the Seventh-day Adventist church was organized in 1863, it was taking a very strong stand against date setting. Many of its leaders had experienced the 1844 date failure, and knew the tragedy that it can bring. As early as 1847, the group who were later to become Seventh-day Adventists published their first book, *Early Writings* and on page 22, they were strongly counseled against setting times for Christ's return.

The Second Adventists, who set the date 1874, (thirty years after 1844, to parallel, the thirty years before Christ commenced His ministry on earth) were a group who kept the first-day of the week as their Sabbath. It was concerning them that Pastor Russell wrote:

“There for the first time (1868), I heard something of the views of Second Adventism, by Jonas Wendell, long since deceased. Thus confess indebtedness to Adventists as well as to other Bible students.” *The Finished Mystery*, (Volume 7) page 53.

The Biblical reason why Seventh-day Adventists opposed date-setting was:

Matthew 24:36, "But of that day and hour knows no man, no, not the angels of heaven, but my Father only."

If Jesus chose not to know the time of His return, and state the fact, then His followers were to take His example.

WARNING OF FALSE PROPHETS

Matthew 24:24, warns of false prophets in the last days. The people who set these dates, and make these false prophecies, the Bible warns us against. It even says that if it were possible such organizations could deceive the very elect. Of all organizations living in these last days, none possibly have made more false prophecies than the Watchtower Society.

CLAIM TO BE JEHOVAH'S PROPHET

One of the most astonishing claims that the Watchtower Society ever made appeared in the April 1, 1972 issue of *The Watchtower* magazine. At that time the organization was in a state of excitement and expectation that the End was going to occur in 1975. They were very confident of their predictions and frequently referred to the fact that they had taken their calculations from very reliable Bible chronology. It was in this climate that they made the claim that they were: Jehovah's "Prophet."

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

(See the previous chapter, and note the extravagant claims that the Society made! The most astounding thing was the invitation to review the record to prove they had acted as a prophet of God!) Of course one who makes predictions in the name of God, must be a "Prophet". The question is, "What type of Prophet?" As the record is reviewed, one will be left in no doubt to the answer to this question!

SOME FALSE PROPHECIES AND TEACHINGS

At the back of this Kit are photocopied sections of old out-of-print Watchtower publications. Computer CD copies of these books are available at www.FreeMinds.org. These can be studied to see exactly what the Society did predict and teach. It is almost impossible to secure any of these books today:

1874

"No, they are not accidental: undoubtedly the same all-wise One who taught us through the Chronology that six thousand years from Adam's creation ended with AD **1872**, and that the seventh thousand, the Millennial age, began there. Who through the Jubilee cycles taught us that the Lord would be present and the Times of Restitution begin in the fall of **1874**. And who through the Times of the Gentiles showed us that we must not expect these things to be done in haste, but by seemingly natural means covering a period of forty years, has in these Parallel Dispensations marked by Israel's 'double' given us evidence which not only itself teaches clearly the Lord's presence, the harvest and the restitution (beginning with favor to fleshly Israel), but at the same time furnishes a proof of the correctness of the other prophetic evidences and of the Chronology. For be it distinctly noticed that if the Chronology, or any of these time-periods, be changed but one year, the beauty and force of this parallelism are destroyed. For instance, if the Chronology be altered but one year, more or less - if we add one year, say to the period of the Kings or the Judges, or if we make it one year less - it would spoil the parallelism. If we should add one year it would make the first of Israel's periods **1846** years long, and the double or other half of it would thus be thrown one year later, while, on the contrary, by such a change of the Chronology the Jubilee cycles would be thrown one year earlier, i.e., AD **1873**. And it would make the 6000 years end in AD 1871, while the Gentile Times would not be affected by it at all. All can see that the harmony or parallelism would thus be utterly destroyed. Or, if one year should be deducted from the chronological reckoning the confusion would be just as great, the changes to the several periods being in an opposite direction. Thus these various time prophecies corroborate each other, while the parallelism of the two dispensations clinches their testimony."
{**Time Is At Hand**, pages 241-242}

1844 and 1874

"The Lord did not come in **1844**, and the world was not burned up with fire .. this was a great disappointment to those 'holy people' who had so confidently looked for Christ ('Michael') then to appear and to exalt them with him in power and glory. But, notwithstanding the disappointment, [Miller's] movement had its designed effects - of awakening an interest in the subject of the Lord's coming, and of casting reproach upon the subject by reason of mistaken expectations. We say designed effects because without a doubt the hand of the Lord was in it. It not only did a work corresponding to that of the first advent movement, when our Lord was born, when the wise men came from the East and when 'all men were in expectation of him' ('Matt. 2:1,2'; 'Luke 3:15'), but it corresponded with it in time also, being just thirty years before the anointing of our Lord, at thirty years of age, at the beginning of his work as Messiah.. we recognize that movement as being in God's order, and as doing a very important work in the separating, purifying, refining, and thus making ready, of a waiting people prepared for the Lord. And not only did it do a purifying and testing work in its own day, but, by casting reproach upon the study of prophecy and upon the doctrine of the Lord's second advent, it has ever since served to test and prove the consecrated .. it was the beginning of the right understanding of Daniel's visions, and at the right time to fit the prophecy. Mr. Miller's application of the three and a half times (1260 years) was practically the same as that we have just given, but he made the mistake of not starting the 1290 and 1335 periods at the same point. Had he done so he would have been right. On the contrary, he started them thirty years sooner - about 509 instead of 539, which ended the 1335 days in **1844**, instead of **1874**." The disappointment of **1844** is briefly recorded in the parable, by the statement that 'the Bridegroom tarried' - i.e., he seemed to the expectant ones to tarry. And the confusion and darkness experienced by all, and the many false and visionary views entered into by some who were there disappointed, are shown in the parable by the

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

statement: 'While the Bridegroom tarried, they all slumbered and slept.' Yea, and in their darkness and slumber many of them dreamed strange, unreasonable things. But the parable shows a second movement, similar, and yet different, among the same virgins. The same general class is referred to but not necessarily the same individuals. As the first movement was the result of light upon the prophecy, regarding the time for Messiah's second advent as the Bridegroom of the Church, so was the second movement. But there are several differences. In the first, the lamps of all the virgins burned alike, and the company expecting the Bridegroom was mixed; whereas in the second movement, while all will be aroused, only those will be led out who have the spirit of the truth in their hearts, as well as a knowledge of the Bible - a trimmed lamp. Disappointment was predicted for the first movement, and waiting for the 1335 days was necessary; but the second was not a disappointment, and a waiting was no longer necessary; for fulfillment came exactly at the close of the 1335 prophetic days - in October 1874. " {**Thy Kingdom Come**, pages 85-93}

1878

"In the spring of 1878 all the holy apostles and other 'overcomers' of the Gospel age who slept in Jesus were raised spirit beings. We, therefore, conclude that their resurrection is now an accomplished fact the God of heaven will set up a Kingdom, and that the setting up of that Kingdom has actually been in progress since the year 1878. That there the resurrection of all the dead in Christ was due; and that therefore, since that date, not only is our Lord and Head invisibly present in the world, but all these holy messengers are also with him." {**Thy Kingdom Come**, 1923 edition, pages 234/305}

1914

"In this chapter we present the Bible evidence proving that the full end of the times of the gentiles, i.e., the full end of their lease of dominion, will be reached in AD 1914; and that the date will be the farthest limit of the rule of imperfect men. And be it observed, that if this is shown to be a fact firmly established by the Scriptures, it will prove; Firstly, that at that date the Kingdom of God, for which our Lord taught us to pray, saying, Thy Kingdom come, will obtain full, universal control, and that it will then be set up, or firmly established, in the earth, on the ruins of present institutions.. It will prove that he whose right it is to thus take the dominion, will then be present as earth's new Ruler; and not only so, but it will prove that he will be present for a considerable period before that date. It will prove that some time before the end of AD 1914 the last member of the divinely recognized church of Christ, the 'royal priesthood' 'the body of Christ,' will be glorified with the Head. It will prove that from that time forward Jerusalem shall no longer be trodden down of the Gentiles, but shall arise from the dust of divine disfavor, to honor. It will prove that by that date, or sooner, the full number from among the Gentiles, who are to be members of the body or bride of Christ, would be fully selected. It will prove that the great 'time of trouble such as never was since there was a nation,' will reach its final culmination, and end, at that date. The condition of things spoken of in symbolic language as raging waves of the sea, melting earth, falling mountains, and burning heavens, will then have passed away. It will prove that before that date, God's kingdom, organized in power, will be in the earth, and will have smitten and crushed the Gentile image." {**Time Is At Hand**, pages 76-78}

1915

"The 'battle of the great day of God Almighty' (Rev. 16:14) which will end in AD 1915 with the complete overthrow of earth's present ruler ship, is already commenced. The gathering of the armies is plainly visible from the standpoint of God's word." {**Time Is At Hand**, 1915 edition, page 101}

1917

"The present great war in Europe is the beginning of the Armageddon of the Scriptures (Rev 19:16-20). It will eventuate in the complete overthrow of all the systems of error which have so long oppressed the people of God and deluded the world. We believe the present war cannot last much longer until revolutions shall break out." {*Pastor Russell's Sermons*, 1917, page 676}

1918

"[False religion, especially Christendom, to be destroyed. Demons would enter the minds of clergy, the] swine class [causing them to do stupid things that provokes] the masses [to destroy them]. It seems conclusive that the hour of Nominal Zion's travail is fixed for the Passover of 1918. (See Revelation 3:14.) That will be 7 years prior to 1925. At that time there is every reason to believe the fallen angels will invade the minds of many of the Nominal Church people, driving them to exceedingly unwise conduct and leading

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

to their destruction at the hands of the enraged masses, who will later be dragged to the same fate. [Question] 'in the parallel year **1918**, I infer we should look for the complete overthrow of nominal Spiritual Israel; i.e., the fall of Babylon. (Revelation 18.) [Answer] Brother Russell replied: 'Exactly. That is exactly the inference to draw.'" {**The Finished Mystery**, pages 128-129}

1925

"After **1925** expect shortly Abel, Enoch, Noah, Abraham, Isaac, Jacob.. No doubt many boys and girls who read this book will live to see Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, Joseph, Daniel, and those other men of old come forth in the glory of their better resurrection, of perfect in mind and body. It will not take long for Christ to appoint them to their post of honor and authority as his earthly representatives. The world and all the present conveniences will seem strange to them at first, but they will soon become accustomed to the new methods. They may have some amusing experiences at first; for they never saw telephones, radios, automobiles, electric lights, aeroplanes, steam engines, and many other things so familiar to us." {*The Way To Paradise*, **1924**, pages 224-226}

1975

"To give aid today in this critical time to prospective sons of God,' announced President Knorr, 'a new book in English, entitled 'Life Everlasting - in Freedom of the Sons of God,' has been published.' .. It did not take the brothers very long to find the chart beginning on page 31, showing that 6,000 years of man's existence end in **1975**. Discussion of **1975** overshadowed about everything else. 'The new book compels us to realize that Armageddon is, in fact, very close indeed,' THE **YEAR 1975**. 6,000 years of human experience will end in **1975**, about nine years from now. What does that mean? Does it mean that God's rest day began 4026 BCE? It could have. The Life Everlasting book does not say it did not.. 'What about the year **1975**? What is it going to mean, dear friends?' asked Brother Franz. 'Does it mean that Armageddon is going to be finished, with Satan bound, by **1975**? It could! It could! All things are possible with God. Does it mean that Babylon the Great is going to go down by **1975**? It could. Does it mean that the attack of Gog of Magog is going to be made on Jehovah's witnesses to wipe them out, then Gog himself will be put out of action? It could. But we are not saying. All things are possible with God. But we are not saying. And don't any of you be specific in saying anything that is going to happen between now and **1975**. But the big point of it all is this, dear friends: Time is short. Time is running out, no question about that.'" {WT October 15, 1966, pages 628-31}

7. Altered And Discarded Teachings

Thy Kingdom Come

(1904 edition — Millennial Dawn, Volume 3) p.342

So, then, if we measure backward down the "First Ascending Passage" to its junction with the "Entrance Passage," we shall have a fixed date to mark upon the downward passage. This measure is 1542 inches, and indicates the year B.C. 1542, as the date at that point. Then measuring down the "Entrance Passage" from that point, to find the distance to the entrance of the "Pit," representing the great trouble and destruction with which this age is to close, when evil will be overthrown from power, we find it to be *3416 inches*, symbolizing *3416 years* from the above date, B.C. 1542. This calculation shows *AD. 1874* as marking the beginning of the period of trouble; for 1542 years B.C. plus *1874* years AD. equals 3416 years. Thus the Pyramid witnesses that the close of *1874 was the chronological beginning* of the time of trouble such as was not since there was a nation -- no, nor ever shall be afterward. And thus it will be noted that this "Witness" fully corroborates the Bible testimony on this subject...

Thy Kingdom Come (1910, Studies In The Scriptures, vol. 3) p.342

So, then, if we measure backward down the "First Ascending Passage" to its junction with the "Entrance Passage," we shall have a fixed date to mark upon the downward passage. This measure is 1542 inches, and indicates the year B.C. 1542, as the date at that point. Then measuring down the "Entrance

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

Passage" from that point, to find the distance to the entrance of the "Pit," representing the great trouble and destruction with which this age is to close, when evil will be overthrown from power, we find it to be *3457 inches*, symbolizing *3457 years* from the above date, B.C. 1542. This calculation shows *AD. 1915* as marking the beginning of the period of trouble; for 1542 years B.C. plus *1915 years AD.* equals 3457 years. Thus the Pyramid witnesses that the close of *1914 will be the beginning* of the time of trouble such as was not since there was a nation -- no, nor ever shall be afterward. And thus it will be noted that this "Witness" fully corroborates the Bible testimony on this subject...

Thy Kingdom Come (SIS vIII) 1891 (1903 edition), p.313

[Note: not available on 1993/1995/1999 CD-ROM]

"The Testimony of God's Stone Witness and Prophet, the Great Pyramid in Egypt"

...the Great Pyramid... seems in a remarkable manner to teach, *in harmony with all the prophets, an outline of the plan of God, past, present, and future...*

The Divine Plan of the Ages [Studies in the Scriptures vol 1] 1886 (1908 edition) p.86

Jesus, the perfect one, has been highly exalted, and now we present ourselves to him that we may be formed and shaped according to his example, and that we may be built up as a building of God. In an ordinary building there is no *chief* corner-stone; but *in our building there is one chief corner-stone, the "top-stone,"...*

The Divine Plan of the Ages

[Studies in the Scriptures vol I] 1886 (1908 edition), FOLD OUT CHART

CHART OF AGES

Illustrating the Plan of God for bringing many sons to glory, and his purpose —

[Chart uses physical *dimensions of Great Pyramid as basis of "the Plan of God".]*

*** The Divine Plan of the Ages, [Studies in the Scriptures vol I] 1886 (1908 edition) end notes ***

THINGS YOU OUGHT TO KNOW AS CHRISTIAN BIBLE STUDENTS

DO YOU KNOW THAT

- We are now living in "the Time of the End" of this Gospel age?
- Our epoch is "the Day of God's Preparation" for the Millennial age?
- The "Days of Waiting" are ended and the "Cleansing of the Sanctuary" — the Church, — the separating of its Wheat and Tares, is now in progress?
- This is the reason for the beginning of the Return of Divine Favor to Fleshly Israel — blinded for centuries — to permit the gathering of an elect class from among the Gentiles?
- This favor is gradually taking shape and known as Zionism?
- Immanuel's Kingdom is now in process of establishment?
- *The Great Pyramid in Egypt is a Witness to all these event of the ages and of our day -- testifying in symbols?*
- *The Pyramid's downward passage under "A Draconis" symbolizes the course of Sin? Its First Ascending Passage symbolizes the Jewish age? Its grand Gallery symbolized the Gospel age? Its Upper Step symbolized the approaching period of tribulation and anarchy, "Judgments," upon Christendom? Its King's Chamber the Divine Nature, etc., of the Overcoming Church -- the Christ, Head and Body? Its Ante-Chamber the Correction in Righteousness of the "Great Company" etc.? Its Queen's Chamber those of Israel and the world who attain Restitution?*

All these interesting topics *with ten Pyramid illustrations* can be had in "Thy Kingdom Come" [Studies in the Scriptures vol III]

Watchtower 1922 June 15 p.187

In the *passages of the Great Pyramid of Gizeh* the agreement of one or two measurements with the present-truth chronology might seem accidental, but the correspondency of dozens of measurements *proves that the same God designed both pyramid and plan...*

Watchtower 1925 May 15 p.148

[Note: not available on 1993/1995/1999 CD-ROM]

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

The great Pyramid of Egypt, standing as a *silent and inanimated witness of the Lord*, is a messenger; and its testimony speaks with great eloquence concerning the divine plan...

Watchtower 1928 November 15 p.341

If the pyramid is not mentioned in the Bible, then *following its teachings is being led by vain philosophy and false science and not following after Christ*.

Watchtower 1928 November 15 p.344

It is more reasonable to conclude that the great pyramid of Gizeh, as well as the other pyramids thereabout, also the sphinx, were built by the rulers of Egypt and under the directions of Satan the Devil... *Then Satan put his knowledge in dead stone, which may be called Satans' Bible, and not God's stone witness...*

Watchtower 1956 May 15 pp.297-8 The Great Pyramid of Giza

The Great Pyramid of Giza

Product of the true worship or the false?

THE Great Pyramid of Giza is one of "the seven wonders of the ancient world." It is the largest of nine pyramids found in Giza, in the valley of the Nile. The Great Pyramid is 486 feet high, or about the height of a modern 40-story building, and each of its four sides is 764 feet long; its base covers thirteen acres. The ratio of its height to the perimeter of its base is the same as that of the radius of a circle to its circumference, a most remarkable feature according to some mathematicians and astronomers. Its four sides line up perfectly with the four directions of the compass. There has been much speculation as to the reason why these pyramids of Giza were built, and in particular why the Great Pyramid was built. [...]

Because none of these theories fully and satisfactorily explain the purpose of building the Great Pyramid, *others have developed the hypothesis that it was built under divine inspiration; that perhaps Melchizedek was its builder and that God provided it as a witness in stone to corroborate the Bible. Such men as John Taylor of London, Professor Smyth and Dr. Edgar of Scotland advocated the theory* that the measurements of the Great Pyramid and particularly the measurements of its internal passageways and chambers, were full of Scriptural meaning. What are the facts? Is the Great Pyramid truly a witness to Jehovah? Was it built by his true worshipers to corroborate the Bible, or was it built by the devotees of pagan religions?*

NOT OF DIVINE ORIGIN

Jehovah God used some forty writers over a period of sixteen centuries to provide us with his Word. Is it reasonable to conclude that even before Moses began to write the Pentateuch God caused a massive structure to be built that was to corroborate his Word? *Rather, is it not an insult to God to hold that he felt it necessary to corroborate his inspired Word by some mute edifice? And that its meaning should be hidden from man for several thousand years and revealed only at a time when the structure had been robbed of all its external beauty?*

Further, is it reasonable to hold that God would direct the construction of a building covering thirteen acres of ground, consisting of 90 million cubic feet of quarried stone, with stones as much as thirty feet long and estimated to weigh as much as 880 tons each, when *all such work had to be done by slave labor?* The very fact that the memory of the invading Shepherd kings who constructed these pyramids was so detested by the Egyptians for generations afterward would certainly put the building of the pyramids in the class of Pharaoh's building program rather than that of King Solomon.

Besides, if the Great Pyramid were built at God's command *should we not expect to find some reference to its construction in God's Word, the Bible?* The Bible tells us of the building of Solomon's temple and that built under the direction of Governor Zerubbabel; also of the building of a water aqueduct by King Hezekiah, yes and also of the building of the tower of Babel, *but not a word about any of the pyramids.* Relevant to this argument also is the fact that *none of the structures described in God's Word employ the design of a pyramid.*

The fact also cannot be gainsaid that *none of the measurements given in the Great Pyramid throw light on the all-important issue of universal sovereignty or why God has permitted evil. Remarkable as some of its measurements seem to appear, it also cannot be denied that these have led to false hopes*

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

resulting in disappointments and none of them serve any purpose in magnifying the name of Jehovah and preaching "this good news of the kingdom," nor are those who put so much store by the Great Pyramid sharing in such preaching work. If there are facts about the Great Pyramid that cannot be explained solely on the basis of human wisdom, then in view of all the foregoing we have no alternative but to conclude that it must have been accomplished by means of demon power rather than by the active force of Jehovah God.

THE ALTAR TO JEHOVAH

Regardless of how interesting, fascinating or intriguing the mathematical, chronological and astronomical implications of the Great Pyramid of Egypt might be, they fade into insignificance when compared with the great work Jehovah is having done today by his altar in the midst of Egypt and his pillar at the border. What the people need today is not just an implied corroboration of Bible chronology but the truth regarding the great issue to be settled, Who rules supreme, Jehovah God or Satan the Devil? They need to see the clear line of demarcation that exists between God's organization and that of the Devil, and they must be shown the urgency of seeking Jehovah, righteousness and meekness before it is too late.—Zeph. 2:1-3.

Since all the evidence points to the fact that *the Great Pyramid was not constructed at God's direction, for Christians to take it seriously would be tantamount to going down to Egypt for help.* (Isa. 31:1) Not by means of a pagan slave-labor-built pile of stone but by means of his Word, his organization and his active force, his holy spirit, Jehovah God is training his dedicated servants for the ministry.

THE LIKELY MOTIVE

There remains but one question. Since it is clear that the Great Pyramid was not built at the direction of Jehovah, and since it appears that it was not built solely to serve as a tomb nor as a storehouse for treasure nor as a temple for pagan worship, *can any satisfactory explanation be given of Cheops' motive for having it built?*

Yes, there is one theory that has much to recommend it and that is based on the prominence that the Great Pyramid gives to the sciences of mathematics and astronomy. It is known that in ancient times astronomy and astrology were considered as one. And from Scriptural and secular history it is apparent that the Chaldeans excelled in both. And it further appears that Cheops and those with him, who conquered Egypt with apparently so little effort, came from Chaldea. Therefore, in view of "the mysterious influence which astrologers ascribe to special numbers, figures, positions, and so forth, the care with which the Great Pyramid was so proportioned as to indicate particular astronomical and mathematical relations is at once explained."

[...] we can find a justification for the building of the Great Pyramid, as a monument erected to astrology with the hope of discovering the fundamental secrets of life and all matter.—*The Great Pyramid*, R. A. Proctor.

Thus, this most logical explanation of all as to the reasons underlying the construction of the Great Pyramid of Giza would indicate that it certainly was not built by those engaging in the true worship of Jehovah God but by those devoted to astrology, a manifestation of Devil religion, and was built in furtherance of such religion.

[Footnotes]

Bible Students also held to this thought prior to 1928.

Watchtower 1957 May 15 p.316 Appreciating Basic Christian Publications ***

17 At a home Bible study you meet a person who *has been told* that the *measurements of the Great Pyramid of Giza harmonize with Bible prophecy and that we should study it to learn God's purposes.* You do not know what to say about this, but know that long ago it was discussed in the Society's publications. So you search back year by year through the volumes of *The Watchtower* until you come to the November 15 and December 1, 1928, issues. There you learn what is wrong with this idea and decide to present these points to your questioner: First, *Egypt was a Devil-ruled pagan country*, not a place for divine revelation; second, *God does not accomplish his work through the type of slave labor that built the pyramids*; third,

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

Christians are told that they must live by faith, not by sight; and fourth, if the Christian congregation was to be taught by the measurements of this ancient pile of stone either Jesus or some of the apostles would have said something about it; and they did not. A briefer account of this is found in the May 15, 1956, issue of *The Watchtower*.

[Emphasis Added]

Watchtower April 15, 2002 "Two Pastors Who Appreciated Russell's Writings"

In 1891, Charles Taze Russell, who did outstanding work among true Christian worshipers of Jehovah, visited Europe for the first time. According to some reports, during a stopover in Pinerolo, Italy, Russell met Professor Daniele Rivoire, a former pastor of a religious group called the Waldenses...In 1903, Rivoire translated Russell's book *The Divine Plan of the Ages* into Italian and had it printed at his own expense...In the book's forward, Rivoire wrote: "We place this first Italian edition under the Lord's protection. May he bless it so that, in spite of its imperfections, it may contribute to magnify his most holy name and encourage his Italian-speaking children to greater devotion. *May the hearts of all those who, by reading this book, appreciate the depth of riches, wisdom, and knowledge of God's plan and love, be grateful to God himself, by whose grace publication of this work has been made possible.*

Another Waldensian pastor who esteemed Russell's publications was Giuseppe Banchetti...The authorized Italian edition of Russell's *Divine Plan of the Ages* was published in 1905. Banchetti wrote an enthusiastic review of the book..."For us", wrote Banchetti, *Russell's book "is the most illuminated and sure guide that any Christian may find to undertake a profitable and blessed study of Holy Scripture...As soon as I read it, it seemed as though scales fell from my eyes, that the way to God was straighter and easier. Even apparent contradictions for the most part disappeared. Doctrines once difficult appeared simple and perfectly acceptable. Things hitherto incomprehensible became clear. The admirable plan of the world's salvation in Christ appeared before me with such awesome simplicity as to induce me to exclaim with the Apostle: O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God!*

8. The 1914 Date

Of all the dates that the Watchtower Society has set for events to take place, The End/Armageddon, the Kingdom to be set up, or Abraham, Isaac and Jacob etc. to be resurrected, all these dates have been rejected and discarded by the Society with one notable exception – 1914. Should this date also have been discarded with the rest?

WHAT DID THE WATCHTOWER FORETELL IN 1914?

As one studies the old publications of the Watchtower Society, they soon find out that what the Society claims they foretold would happen in 1914, and what they did actually say would happen, are two different accounts:

Millennial Dawn, Volume 2, pages 76-78:

In this chapter we present the Bible evidence proving that the full end of the times of the Gentiles, i.e., the full end of their lease of dominion, will be reached in AD 1914; and that that date will be the farthest limit of the rule of imperfect men. And be it observed, that if this is shown to be a fact firmly established by the Scriptures, it will prove:

First, That at that date the Kingdom of God, for which our Lord taught us to pray, saying, "Thy Kingdom come," will have obtained full, universal control, and that it will then be "set up," or firmly established, in the earth.

Secondly, It will prove that he whose right it is thus to take the dominion will then be present as earth's new Ruler; and not only so, but it will also prove that he will be present for a considerable period before that date; because the overthrow of these Gentile governments is directly caused by his smashing them to pieces

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

as a potter's vessel (Psalm 2:9; Revelation 2:27), and establishing in their stead his own righteous government.

Thirdly, It will prove that some time before the end of AD 1914 the last member of the divinely recognized Church of Christ, the "royal priesthood," "the body of Christ," will be glorified with the Head; because every member is to reign with Christ, being a joint-heir with him of the Kingdom, and it cannot be fully "set up" without every member.

Fourthly, It will prove that from that time forward Jerusalem shall no longer be trodden down of the Gentiles, but shall arise from the dust of divine disfavor, to honor; because the "Times of the Gentiles" will be fulfilled or completed.

Fifthly, It will prove that by that-date or sooner, Israel's blindness will begin to be turned away; because their "blindness in part" was to continue only "until the fullness of the Gentiles be come in" (Romans 11:25), or, in other words, until the full number from among the Gentiles, who are to be members of the body or bride of Christ, would be fully selected.

Sixthly, It will prove that the great "time of trouble such as never was since there was a nation", will reach its culmination in a world-wide reign of anarchy.

From the above we learn that:

1. The Watchtower Society foretold that in 1914:
 - a. The Kingdom of God is established on the earth.
 - b. The Overthrow of Gentile governments, Armageddon would have taken place after world-wide anarchy.
 - c. The Church would be taken to heaven before 1914. d. Jerusalem would return to honor.
 - d. The Jews would return also to favor.
2. The "Times of the Gentiles" was understood to be:
The time that the Gentile nations would rule the earth, before God would destroy them and set up His kingdom on the earth. Nothing of the above is believed or taught today!

WHAT HAPPENED WHEN NOTHING TOOK PLACE?

The Society's own publications will help to answer this question:

Light, (Volume 1, 1930) page 194:

SACKCLOTH

"Sackcloth" is a symbol of reproach and mourning when applied to God's people: "For the zeal of your house hath eaten me up; and the reproaches of them that reproached thee are fallen upon me. When I wept, and chastened my soul with fasting, that was to my reproach. I made sackcloth also my garment; and I became a proverb to them." (Psalm 69:9-11) Isaiah represented God's anointed people on earth and he prophesied in sackcloth. (Isaiah 20:2) The Watch Tower, and its companion publications of the Society, for forty years emphasized the fact that 1914 would witness the establishment of God's kingdom and the complete glorification of the church. During that period of forty years God's people on Earth were carrying on a witness work, which work was foreshadowed by Elijah and John the Baptist. All of the Lord's people looked forward to 1914 with joyful expectation. When that time came and passed there was much disappointment, chagrin and mourning, and the Lord's people were greatly in reproach. They were ridiculed by the clergy and their allies in particular, and pointed to with scorn, because they had said so much about 1914, and what would come to pass, and their 'prophecies' had not been fulfilled.

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

One wearing sackcloth usually puts it on himself. God's people on earth, after the reproach that came upon them, following 1914 put sackcloth upon themselves as an evidence of mourning. (Lamentations 2:10) This is proven by what appeared in The Watch Tower.

During the period of its publication The Watch Tower has been the mouthpiece of God's children on earth. Immediately following the end of the Gentile

This admission came in 1930 with the publication of the above book Light. Yet having admitted that they had said so much about 1914, and what would come to pass, and their 'prophecies' had not been fulfilled they still proceed to claim that they are the mouthpiece of God's children on earth!

THE TIMES OF THE GENTILES

This expression was completely re-interpreted after 1914 and given a different meaning entirely. What they had foretold concerning the times of the Gentiles did not come to pass!

WHY WAS THE 1914 DATE RETAINED?

The answer is simply because the World War broke out in that year. If by chance that traumatic event had not taken place, 1914 would have joined, 1874, 1878, 1915, 1918, 1920, 1925, and more recently 1975! Without exception, they were all false prophecies! (See the chapters on 1925, and 1975.)

9. 1925 And Beth-Sarim

The Watchtower Society foretold that in 1925 the Kingdom on earth would be established and Abraham, Isaac and Jacob etc. would be resurrected to take charge of the visible affairs of earth. When this failed to happen, then a house was built called Beth-Sarim meaning "House of the Princes". It was to be a testimony to the world that they still expected the Princes to arrive in the immediate future, and this home would be in readiness for these men of old to occupy. In the meantime, the president of the Society, Judge J. F. Rutherford, moved into the mansion. In 1942 he died there. He admitted before he died that he had made "an ass" of himself for what he predicted for 1925. Beth-Sarim has since been sold, but its memory is still an embarrassment to the Society. It is also a warning to others not to put their faith in such an organization!

THE DEVELOPMENT OF THE 1925 DATE

Originally the Watchtower Society taught the Princes were to return in 1915. Pastor Russell wrote in Studies in the Scriptures Volume 4, (1897) on page 625:

"The beginning of the earthly phase of the Kingdom in the end of A.D. 1914 will, we understand, consist wholly of the resurrected holy ones of older time, from John the Baptizer back to Abel; Abraham, Isaac, Jacob and all the holy prophets."

Pastor Russell was so sure that God had given him these truths centered around Armageddon coming at the end of 1914, and the Princes at the beginning of 1915 that he wrote concerning it that God had "made no mistake and his plans alter not." - Studies in the Scriptures Volume 4, page 624.

PRINCES TO ARRIVE TEN YEARS LATER - NOW IN 1925!

Pastor Russell died in 1916, after witnessing that all he had predicted for 1914 had failed to take place. He was succeeded as president of the Society by Judge Rutherford who now made the date for the Princes to return, ten years later:

"No doubt Satan believed the Millennial Kingdom was due to be set up in 1915. Be that as it may, there is evidence that the establishment of the Kingdom in Palestine will probably be in 1925, ten years

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

later than we once calculated." *The Finished Mystery*, (Volume 7), page 128.

Rutherford further developed expectations for this date in the book, *Millions Now Living Will Never Die*, pages 88-97, where he foretold that in 1925, the Princes would be resurrected to establish the Kingdom on earth. (See the photocopy of this section of that book at the back of this Kit. Also see the section of the book, *The Way to Paradise*, where a description is given of what it would be like as these Princes were resurrected, and how you could call these Princes at Jerusalem on the telephone and request them to arrange to have your loved ones resurrected!)

THE 1925 DATE FAILS SO BETH-SARIM IS BUILT

When the 1925 date passed, there was widespread disappointment. Those with a heavenly hope were especially disappointed

"The view had been somewhat general among the anointed that the remaining members of the body of Christ would be changed to heavenly glory that year (1925)" *Jehovah's Witnesses in the Divine Purpose*, page 107.

Those who were expecting to stay on earth, were also disappointed:

"...some prepared for their own loved ones with expectancy of their resurrection." *1975 Yearbook of Jehovah's Witnesses*, page 146.

Thousands left the Society! Watchtower leaders urged the members not to be discouraged because the Princes would still arrive soon. (See in this Kit a photocopy of *Millions Now Living Will Never Die*, where 1925 was rubbed out and soon rubber stamped over that date!) However, the most effective ruse was that of President Rutherford to build Beth-Sarim! (See *Salvation*, p.311.)

The house attracted a lot of publicity, which the Society encouraged. See the article in their big 1931 Assembly paper *The Messenger*, boasting of this. One picture of the house even had the caption:

What the back and the West side look like. Do you think David will like it?

The whole thing became a terrible embarrassment and laughing stock. Within the Society were murmurings with their President living in this lavish marIS1011 which had not been built in Jerusalem, but in lovely San Diego, California!

This drawing of Beth-Sarim appeared in one of the last books (*Salvation*) that J. F. Rutherford wrote before he died in this mansion. On the previous page he told why the house was built.

BETH-SARIM

At San Diego, California, there is a small piece of land, on which, in the year 1929, there was built a house, which is called and known as Beth-Sarim. The Hebrew words Beth Sarim mean "House of the Princes"; and the purpose of acquiring that property and building the house was that there might be some tangible proof that there are those on earth today who believe God and Christ Jesus and in His kingdom, and who believe that the faithful men of old will soon be resurrected by the Lord, be back on earth, and take charge of the visible affairs of earth. The title to Beth-Sarim is vested in the WATCH TOWER BIBLE & TRACT SOCIETY in trust, to be used by the president of the Society and his assistants for the present, and thereafter to be for ever at the disposal of the aforementioned princes on the earth. To be sure, everything then on the earth will belong to the Lord, and neither the Lord nor the princes need others to build houses for them; but it was thought well and pleasing to God that the aforementioned house be built as a testimony to the name of Jehovah and showing faith his announced purposes. The house has served as a testimony to many persons throughout the Earth, and while the unbelievers have mocked concerning it and spoken contemptuously of it, yet it standing here as a testimony to Jehovah's name; And if and when the princes do return and some of them occupy the property, such will be a confirmation of the faith and hope that introduced the building or Beth-Sarim. [*Salvation*, Page 311]

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

Jehovah's Witnesses 1931 Year Book

During the year loving hands provided a comfortable house pleasantly situated at San Diego, California, wherein the president and his office assistants can escape the rigors of the winter and there be enabled to go on with the work. This provision is graciously acknowledged as from the Lord. He knows who are the givers, and will bless them accordingly. The title to that house is in the Society, and is held in trust for the perpetual use of God's faithful ones. It was thought appropriate to give a name to the house, and henceforth it will be known by the name "Beth-Sarim". This is a compound Hebrew word, and its meaning is "house of the princes", and is intended for the princes mentioned by the Lord. It is confidently expected that in God's due time some of the faithful men mentioned in Hebrews 11, and whom Christ shall "make princes in all the earth", will find an abode in that house while carrying on the work the Lord will give them to do. The house is a small matter, but it reminds us that there is a direct and close relationship between all the creatures that are truly devoted to God. Some blessed day all of God's creation who are faithful will be gathered together into one family under Christ his beloved One. (Ephesians 1:10) To what extent the Lord will use the houses his people have built on earth in the past few years is for him to decide, of course.

We are always glad, however, to believe, according to his Word, that he is pleased to have his people recognize the close relationship between all that love God.

The enemy gave wide publication of and concerning the building of that house at San Diego. The purpose of the enemy, of course, was to bring reproach upon the work of the Society. Others have given friendly mention of the house through the public press. The publication which has spread over the earth has served to let the people know that there are some on Earth who have full faith and confidence in God and his promises, and see that his kingdom is at hand, and that in his kingdom he will have faithful men on earth to represent him. The mere amount of publication could not have been bought for five times the cost of the house. This is another evidence of the fact that the enemy often overreaches himself and never succeeds in accomplishing a real purpose. In the days of the early church the apostle wrote: "Some indeed preach Christ even of envy and strife, and some also of good will: the one preach Christ of contention, not sincerely, supposing to add affliction to my bonds." (Philippians 1:15, 16) It is even so today. The campaign of education goes grandly on. *Jehovah's Witnesses 1931 Year Book (1930), Pages 36, 37.*

WATCHTOWER, APRIL 1930

DEAR BROTHER RUTHERFORD,

During the question meeting held by the Los Angeles ecclesia on Sunday, February 23, 1930, and over which you presided, the friends were so moved by your answers given to questions asked that at a meeting, directly following they voted with one accord to instruct me to write this letter.

Your answers given to some of the false accusations made against you were so straightforward and open that none actuated by the spirit of the Lord could help but rejoice. We regret that the agents of Satan will stoop so low as to deal in personalities and to malign you, but it was done to the Master when he was here, and all who serve the Lord can but except the same. It is it a mark of your faithfulness. We want you, to feel also that these accusations grieve us as much as they do you; for while made directly against you, yet as all the members form the body of Christ, so also an injury to one member is an injury to all. We want you to feel, in every hour of trial, our love for you and our devotion to the cause for which you are so fiercely and valiantly fighting, and that we are fighting shoulder to shoulder with you. We want you to know that while we rejoice to have the facts concerning tile questions answered there was not one, in the Los Angeles ecclesia who loves tile Lord and his kingdom who held any doubts in his heart concerning you.

Your wonderful provisions in the deed to the San Diego property have impressed the friends with your faith in the Lord's promises. It has filled us with a keener realization of the fact that we are living in the time of the establishment of his kingdom. It has stirred our hearts with a desire to show our faithfulness to the Lord in this short remaining time left to us. With this thought in mind some of the friends have suggested that a short article in The Watch Tower, setting forth the provisions of this deed, would be a source of comfort to all the friends as this information has been to us here. Be assured, dear brother, of our continued prayers in your behalf and of a double portion of our love and that he who is for us is greater than

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

till who are against us. Your brother in Christ, CHARLES G. O'HANLON, Secretary, Los Angeles Ecclesia. [*The Watchtower, April 1, 1930, Page 111*]

WATCHTOWER, AUGUST 1931

MY DEAR BROTHER RUTHERFORD: After reading Light, I thought I must let you know how much. I have appreciated same; and I thank Jehovah for the wonderful explanation of Revelation that lie has given to the remnant at this time. It is a clear indication that the great battle of Armageddon is rapidly approaching, as we see the prophecies which have been fulfilled, particularly since 1914, and others in course of fulfillment.

It is grand to see that many of those prophecies are being fulfilled by the faithful remnant. I count it a glorious privilege to have a share in this stupendous work. Some of the chapters seem to stand out very prominently, especially chapters 8, 9, 11, 13, 20 and 21.

It is thrilling to look forward to the return of the faithful prophets before the last members of the remnant pass beyond. Surely the Lord guided you to having the house built in San Diego in preparation for their return. May he continue to bless you abundantly as you press the battle to the gate.

For your encouragement I would like to tell you that the brethren over here are deeply appreciating Light and the opportunity of placing it in the hands of the people. Many of the classes have already commenced to use it as a class study. With much love, Your brother and co-laborer in Zion, ALFRED G. BORLAND, England. [*The Watchtower, August 1, 1931, Page 239*]

WATCHTOWER, MARCH 1937

Those ancient witnesses, specially mentioned by the apostle in Hebrews the eleventh chapter, have not expected to see the feet members of Christ, the Greater-than-Joseph, while in the flesh, but the evidence strongly points to the fact that they will see at least some of them on the earth. The Lord in his loving kindness makes provision, and we may confidently expect that those faithful men of old will be back on the earth before Armageddon ends and while some of the remnant are still on the earth, and that they will unite together in the praise and service of Jehovah God. There is at least one house on earth the title to which is held in trust for the use and benefit of those faithful men. Whether they occupy it or not, this house has been a means of advertising the kingdom throughout the earth and calling to the attention of the people that those faithful men will be back on the earth, and that the Lord will use them as governors or local rulers. It will not be at all difficult to recognize such men, because they will be upstanding and righteous and do righteousness in every way, and will be a joy to those who come in contact and serve with them. The public press has ridiculed and scoffed at BETH-SARIM, but those who love the Lord rejoice that this has been used as a means to publicly call attention to the faithful men whom God will bring forth. [*The Watchtower, March 15, 1937, Page 86*]

SALVATION, 1939

At San Diego, California, there is a small piece of land, on which, in the year 1929, there was built a house, which is called and known as Beth-Sarim. The Hebrew words Beth-Sarim mean "House of the Princes"; and the purpose of acquiring that property, and building the house was that there might be some tangible proof that there are those on earth today who fully believe God and Christ Jesus and in His kingdom, and who believe that the faithful men of old will soon be resurrected by the Lord, be back on earth, and take charge of the visible affairs of earth. The title to Beth-Sarim is vested in the WATCH TOWER BIBLE & TRACT SOCIETY in trust, to be used by the president of the Society and his assistants for the present, and thereafter to be for ever at the disposal of the aforementioned princes on the earth. To be sure, everything then on the earth will belong to the Lord, and neither the Lord nor the princes need others to build houses for them; but it was thought well and pleasing to God that the aforementioned house

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

be built as a testimony to the name of Jehovah and showing faith in his announced purposes. The house has served as a testimony to many persons throughout the earth, and while the unbelievers have mocked concerning it and spoken contemptuously of it, yet it stands there as a testimony to Jehovah's name; and if and when the princes do return and some of them occupy the property, such will be a confirmation of the faith and hope that induced the building of Beth-Sarim. [*J. F. Rutherford, Salvation (1939), Page 311*]

WATCHTOWER, JUNE 1940

Some unreliable person is responsible for the circulation of a report that Beth-Sarim is being enlarged as a place of security and that this is being built by the Society. There is absolutely not one word of truth in the report. Those who are interested in the Theocracy would better be circulating the kingdom message rather than false imaginations of others. [*The Watchtower, June 1, 1940, Page 162.*]

CONSOLATION, APRIL 1941

Jehovah's people have a right to proper use of the courts. There are times when they would not be using the spirit of a sound mind to do otherwise. At Beth Sarim, San Diego, Judge Rutherford does much work at night. For some time he was annoyed by a young man flashing a spotlight into his study and blowing his automobile horn. He had him arrested, which was right and proper. The young man got a 30-day suspended In sentence, and will have sense enough to stay away now or get locked up. [*Consolation, April 30, 1941, Page 14*]

10. The 1975 Date

Expecting the End to come in 1975, caused the greatest increases in membership that the Watchtower Society had ever known. When the time passed, the resultant disappointment caused its greatest losses. How and why did it happen?

WHY WAS THE DATE SET?

Throughout the 1950s, the Watchtower Society enjoyed huge membership increases. But by 1960, the 12% increase they had enjoyed in 1959, was down to 6%. The next year, in 1961, it had dropped again, now to 3.9%. By 1966, it had dropped to the serious low of only 2.4% increase. It was in this year that the 1975 date was presented as the end of 6,000 years of man's existence. Time was running out, there were only a few short years before the expected Millennium!

WHAT EFFECT DID THE SETTING OF THIS DATE HAVE ON THE SOCIETY?

One has only to examine the statistics to see that there was an immediate upsurge in activity. In two years the percentage increase of membership had doubled. In another two years it had almost doubled again! In 1966, only 58,904 had been baptised, but by 1970 the number had jumped to 164,193. In the two years before the End was expected in late 1975, nearly 600,000 people were baptised! (See the charts of statistics on the opposite page.)

HOW WAS THE 1975 DATE SET?

It could be said that the date was set by *suggestion*. Years of date-setting and the tragedies these false prophecies had caused, had taught the Society something. In fact after the 1914, 1918 and 1925 dates failed, they resolved to *quit fixing dates*: "There was disappointment concerning the years 1914, 1918 and 1925, and they also learned to quit fixing dates for the future" Vindication, Volume 1, (1931) pages 338-339. However, many years had passed and with a failing membership increase the temptation became too great! But this time they were careful not to make their prophetic statements too definite. Instead of saying the End *would come* in 1975, they would keep themselves covered by saying it *could come* in 1975. It would gain them the same ends, but be much safer. Notice the following statements:

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

“According to this trust worthy Bible chronology, six thousand years from man’s creation will end in 1975, and the seventh period of a thousand years of human history will begin in the fall of 1975 CE. So six thousand years of man’s existence will soon be up.” **Life Everlasting In Freedom of the Sons of God, (1966), page 29.**

"Thus, eight years remain to account for a full 6,000 years of the seventh day. Eight years from the autumn of 1967 would bring us to the autumn of 1975, fully 6,000 years into God's seventh day, his rest day. After 6,000 years of misery, toil, trouble, sickness and death under Satan's rule, mankind is indeed in dire need of relief, a rest. The seventh-day of the Jewish week, the Sabbath, would well picture the final 1,000 year reign of God's kingdom under Christ when mankind would be uplifted from 6,000 years of sin and death." **The Watchtower, May 1, 1968, pages 270-277.**

This was the first magazine article announcing the 1975 date more were to follow:

WHY ARE YOU LOOKING FORWARD TO 1975?

"One thing is absolutely certain, Bible chronology reinforced with fulfilled Bible prophecy shows that six thousand years of man's existence will soon be up, yes, within this generation! (Matthew 24:34) This is therefore, no time to be indifferent and complacent. This is not the time to be toying with the words of Jesus that "concerning that day and hour *nobody* knows, neither the angels of the heavens nor the Son, but only the Father." (Matthew 24:36) To the contrary, It is a time when one should be keenly aware that the end of this system of things is rapidly coming to its violent end. Make no mistake. **The Watchtower, August 15, 1968, pages 494-501.**

In this article the Watchtower Society were so sure that they knew the End was coming in 1975, that they told their people this is **not the time to be toying with the words of Jesus** that "concerning that day and hour **nobody** knows." The nobody is in italics because they were sure that they did know!

“6000 Years Nearing Completion. There is another way that helps confirm the fact that we am living in the final few years of this "time of the end" (Daniel 12:9) The Bible shows that we are nearing the end of a full 6,000 years of human history. What significance does this have? How fitting it would be for God, following this pattern to end man's misery after six thousand years of human rule and follow it with His glorious Kingdom rule for a thousand years!” **Awake, October 8, 1968, pages 13-16.**

“When Do 6000 Years End? How can it be determined when 6,000 years of human history will end? According to reliable Bible chronology Adam and Eve were created in 4026 BCE. From the autumn of 4026 BCE to 1 BCE = 4,025 years. From 1 BCE to 1 CE = 1 year. From 1 CE to 1968 CE = 1967 years. Total to autumn of 1968 = 5,993 years. This would leave only seven more years from the autumn of 1968 to complete 6000 full years of human history. That seven year period will evidently finish in the autumn of the year 1975.” **Awake, October 8, 1968, pages 13-16.**

Note the statement that Eve was also created in 4026 BCE! After the 1975 date failed the Society said it was not known when Eve was created, even though *reliable Bible chronology* had named the date.

PREPARING FOR 1975

The Watchtower Society's publications (see the previous page) announcing 1975, and emphasising the shortness of time before the End could come, whipped Jehovah's Witnesses into an excited frenzy of activity. The most sincere, gave up their jobs, sold their homes and went into full time pioneering work for the "few years that remained." The *Kingdom Ministry*, an internal paper just for their own members, in the March 1968, issue, even numbered the time left in months:

"Just think, brothers, there are only about **ninety months left** before 6,000 years of man's existence on earth is completed."

The *Kingdom Ministry*, May 1974, even commended those who had sold up their homes etc:

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

"Reports are heard of brothers selling their homes and property and planning to finish out the rest of their days in this old system in the pioneer service. Certainly this is a fine way to spend the **short time remaining** before the wicked world's end. 1 John 2:17"

THE 1975 CHRONOLOGY PROVED UNRELIABLE!

Unfortunately for the faithful Witnesses who had implicitly believed the Watchtower, *the wicked world* did not *end* as suggested in 1975. However, the Society was ready to try and soften the blow, by stating they were now not sure what period of time elapsed between the creation of Adam and Eve. Previously they had said that Adam and Eve were created in 4026 B.C.E:

The Watchtower, 05/01/1968, page 271:

From the year of Adam and Eves Creation in 4026 BCE.

Awake, 10/08/1968, page 14:

When Do 6,000 Years End? How can it be determined when 6,000 years of human history will end? According to reliable Bible chronology Adam and Eve were created in 4026 BCE. From the autumn of 4026 BCE to 1BCE = 4025 years."

Also they had said they knew the time when the evening of the seventh creative "day" began: 4026 BCE: *God's Eternal purpose Now Triumphant (1974), page 51: "EVENING OF SEVENTH CREATIVE "DAY" BEGINS IN 4024 BCE.*

Now with 1975 passed, and facing a disappointed and in some places a hostile membership, they now began to make explanations that the time of Eve's creation and the beginning of the seventh creative rest day is not known:

"Why then do we not know when God's "rest day" began and when it will end? Although the time of Adam's creation can be determined, the beginning of God's "rest day" cannot. Thus is so because there was a time lapse of unspecified length between Adam's creation and the creation of Eve. Not until after the creation of Eve did God's "rest day" begin. The start of that day being unknown, its end is likewise unknown." *The Watchtower, 01/01/1976, Page 579.*

So the Watchtower Society's reliable Bible chronology did not prove to be reliable! The above is not an apology for the tragedy, but this was to follow:

THE SOCIETY APOLOGISES FOR 1975

At first the Society tried to place the blame on its people for having "over-reacted" concerning their expectations for 1975. (In the 1975 *Yearbook*, page 146, they put the blame on their people for expecting too much in 1925!) However, this time they could not get away with it. Too many of their loyal people were hurting too much. They were now without their homes, employment, and for some they had given up their opportunities of gaining an education. Throughout the Society was noted a high rate of mental illness, and some even committed suicide. They felt they could no longer trust the Society, yet on the other hand they felt they could not return or go to any of the churches of Babylon the Great! Eventually to gain some credibility, the Society felt it would have to make some sort of an apology. This they did in the 1980 *Yearbook*, pages 30-31, although they were still very reluctant to accept the full responsibility for the disappointment of 1975:

"The brothers also appreciated the candour of this same talk, which acknowledged the Society's Responsibility for some of the disappointment a number felt regarding 1975."

A further apology appeared in *The Watchtower*, on the 1 5th March, 1980, page 17:

"With the appearance of the book *Life Everlasting-in Freedom of the Sons Of God*, and its comments as to how appropriate it would be for the millennial reign of Christ to parallel the seventh millennium of

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

man's existence, considerable expectation was aroused regarding the year 1975. There were statements made then, and thereafter, stressing that this was only a possibility. Unfortunately, however, along with such cautionary information, there were other statements published that Implied that such realisation of hopes by that year was more of a probability than a mere possibility. It Is to be regretted that these latter statements apparently overshadowed the cautionary ones and contributed to a build up of the expectation already initiated."

For thousands such apologies were too little, too late! They had already left the Society, but tragically most were now too bewildered and embittered to ever be helped. These false prophecies could be amusing if they were not so tragic! The 1975 horse was only one in a long line!

11. Chronology

Chronology is the frame-work of Watchtower Society; it is the reason for its existence. When Watchtower chronology is shown to be in error, the whole organization collapses.

Originally the Watchtower was raised up as a result of chronology, centered around 1874 AD but after fifty years of teaching this date, the Watchtower admitted it was in error by moving the major date to 1914. However, this 1914 date is also seriously in error and should have been discarded by the Watchtower along with its many other dates which have proved false, such as 1918, 1920, 1925, 1975 etc.

THE WATCHTOWER BEGAN AS A RESULT OF CHRONOLOGY

"Russell was interested in learning from any quarter, whatever God had to teach. He became Interested in the chronology set forth in the magazine and immediately got in touch with Barbour to arrange a meeting." "Jehovah's Witnesses in the Divine Purpose- page 18 (emphasis mine) "So I paid Mr. Barbour's expenses to come to see me during the summer of 1876 to show me fully and scripturally, if he could, that the prophecies indicated 1874 as the date at which the Lord's presence and the Harvest began. He came, and the evidence satisfied me." – The Watchtower, 1916, page 171.

When Russell became convinced that Christ had come invisibly in 1874, as a result of Barbour's chronology, he immediately began to preach this 'truth', which resulted in the raising up of the Watchtower organization. The Divine Purpose on page 18 tells of one of the first steps he took with his important message:

"In 1877 Pastor Russell called a meeting of all the ministers of Allegheny and Pittsburgh, showed them the Scriptures which indicated our Lord's presence and urged them to investigate and proclaim the message. All of the ministers of the two cities were present: all of the ministers of the two cities refused to believe."

"The fact that Russell was teaching a lie from the outset is obvious since even the Watchtower itself fifty years later admitted Christ was not present then or from 1874 at all, and changed the date to 1914. Never-the-less, Russell threw himself into teaching this error, and traveled widely with his message for the next two years until. "Acting upon this leading of the Lord, I gave up traveling, and in July, 1879, the first number of The Watchtower and Herald of Christ's Presence made its appearance." - Divine Purpose, page 21.

Thus the "Watchtower" magazine began with a message heralding Christ's presence, who was not present. For fifty years the Organization taught this error!

DATES RELATED TO 1874

Further erroneous dates were built around 1874:

a. The Resurrection in 1878. This date was calculated from the 1874 date in the following manner:

"Our Lord's resurrection occurred three and a half years after his advent as the Messiah, in A. D. 29: and the resurrection of his body, the Church, we have seen, was due in the year 1878, three and a half years after his second advent, In October 1874." (M.D. Volume 3 "Thy Kingdom Come" page 305). This

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

resurrection was expected to be a bodily one, but when 1878 passed and nothing happened, it was 'found' to have taken place invisibly in the spirit, from this was further developed the erroneous 144,000 doctrine.

b. The 6,000 years ended in 1872. (See Chapter on the 1975 date).

c. In 1914 the end would come. There was to be a forty year Harvest period from 1874, and then all the Church or Body of Christ was to be caught up and taken to heaven, with the End coming at Armageddon in October 1914:

"Pastor Russell and those associated with him believed Christ's invisible presence in spirit form had already begun in 1874. They believed Christ's purpose in returning was to gather them together, restore the true worship and then, in 1914 at the end of 'Gentile Times', take them into God's kingdom, just as a bridegroom would claim his bride." (Divine Purpose page 23).

"The 'battle of the great day of God Almighty' (Revelation 16:14) which will end in AD 1914 with the complete overthrow of earth's present ruler ship. (M. D. Volume 2, The Time is at Hand, see also page 77 of this volume in this Kit).

Establishment of the 1914 date is outlined in Millennial Dawn, Volume 2. The Time is at Hand, chapter 4 entitled "The Times of the Gentiles", by a time period of 2,520 years being added on to 606 BC (later to be changed to 607 BC) the date when the Watchtower contended the crown was taken from Zedekiah and Jerusalem was besieged by Nebuchadnezzar and laid in ruins.

ALL CHRONOLOGICAL DATES PROVED TO BE IN ERROR

1. 1874 Second Advent of Christ. As already shown the time of Christ's presence was discovered fifty years later not to have taken place in 1874 and this date is never taught now by the Watchtower.
2. 1878 Resurrection. This date was also discarded in 1927, and the 1918 date substituted.
3. 1872 Ending the 6,000 years. Although much was made for fifty years that the Millennium had dawned at that time, recently it was suggested it was to begin in 1975.
4. 1914 Armageddon etc. This date was in error, firstly because it was calculated on an error. The crown was taken from Zedekiah and Jerusalem was laid in ruins by Nebuchadnezzar in 586 BC not 606 BC or 607 BC. Furthermore, when 1914 did come, Armageddon did not arrive, and the Church was not taken to heaven etc., there was a tremendous disappointment (See Light, Volume 2 page 194 and Vindication, page 146, shown in this kit under title, "Some False Watchtower Prophecies and Teachings").

In connection with the 1914 date was 1915 for the setting up of the kingdom under Abraham, Isaac etc. (see M.D. Volume 4, The Day of Vengeance, page 625, in this kit). This date was also discarded, and moved to 1925, which in turn proved also a false prophecy, along with the interim prophecies for 1918, and 1920.

WHY DID THE WATCHTOWER RETAIN THE 1914 DATE?

The failure of the 1914 date almost resulted in the collapse of the Organization after Russell's death, until Rutherford in rebuilding the Society decided to capitalize on the fact that the World War had broken out in 1914, and they had foretold this date! The expression, "Times of the Gentiles" had previously meant the time in which the Gentile nations could be saved before their final destruction. This was re-interpreted. Over the intervening years as 'new light' arrived, the Watchtower has discovered many new facets of what this expression has come to mean, including Christ's presence now in 1914, Satan being cast out of heaven etc. Today this 1914 date is of paramount importance to Watchtower teaching.

Following 1914 the Watchtower was loathe to admit they had made a mistake concerning being taken to heaven by 1914. They maintained that they still would be taken to heaven 'soon after' 1914 and in their new editions of Volume 2, Thy Kingdom Come, page 228, was changed from "That the deliverance of the saints must take place sometime before 1914 is manifest" to "That the deliverance of the saints must

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

take place soon after 1914 is manifest. (See Volume 2 in Kit). Many such changes were made. As for admitting the end had not come in 1914, they doggedly maintained the world had ended, 'chronologically' or 'legally'! As late as 1930 the Watchtower organization stated in Light, Volume 1 page 108, "1914 marked the legal ending of the old world and there Christ the rightful King took unto himself his power as king."

SOURCES FOR WATCHTOWER CHRONOLOGY

(from Watchtower Society publications.)

The Kings of (Neo-) Babylon and their Reigns:

Amel-Marduk (Evil-Merodach) as the oldest son succeeded to Babylon's throne in 581 B.C. [Babylon the Great Has Fallen page 183]

After reigning but two years king Evil-Merodach was murdered by his brother in law Neriglissar. According to the Inscriptions that have been found, this usurper of the throne spent most of his time in building operations and reigned four years. When he died, his son Labashi-Marduk, though not yet of age, succeeded him. He was a vicious boy, and within nine months he had his throat cut by an assassin. Nabonidus, who had served as Governor of Babylon and who had been Nebuchadnezzar's favorite son-in-law, now took the throne and had a fairly glorious reign till Babylon fell in 539 BC. [Babylon the Great Has Fallen, page 184]

NOTE: BC means BEFORE CHRIST. BCE means BEFORE COMMON ERA. While these two abbreviations cover the same period of time, the latter is becoming more popular in secular societies especially in non-Christian countries.

NEBUCHADNEZZAR, NEBUCHADREZZAR (Nebuchadnezzar, Nebuchadrezzar) [Nebo, defend the boundary]. Second ruler of the Neo-Babylonian Empire; son of Nabopolassar and father of Evil-Merodach (Amel-Marduk), who succeeded him to the throne. Nebuchadnezzar ruled as king for 43 years (624-581 BCE). [Aid to Bible Understanding, page 1212]

NABONIDUS (Nabonidus) [Akkadian, Nabunaid; the god Nabu (Nebo) is exalted]. Last supreme monarch of the Babylonian Empire and father of Belshazzar. On the basis of cuneiform texts he is believed to have ruled some seventeen Years (556-539 BCE.). [Aid to Bible Understanding, page 1195]

Visions of the beasts (Daniel 7:1-8:27). We return to the "first year of Belshazzar," whose reign began in 553 BCE. Daniel receives a private dream, which he records in Aramaic. [All Scripture Is Inspired Of God and Beneficial, page 140]

According to The Westminster Dictionary of the Bible, 1944, page 64, and Babylonian Chronology, 1956, Parker and Dubberstein, pages 13,29, Belshazzar began to reign as the coregent in the third reigning year of Nabonidus (Nabunaid), which was 553 BCE. Daniel 7:1. [All Scripture Is Inspired Of God and Beneficial, page 139 (footnote)]

1914 - PROPHECIES RE-INTERPRETED ACCORDINGLY

Throughout Watchtower writings a big re-alignment had to be made to fit into the new teaching for 1914. The Signs of Christ's presence from the period since 1874 to 1914 had to be forgotten and applied since 1914. It took quite some time before the whole 'truth' became clear to the Society, as in 1917 (three years after Christ 'had come' in 1914). The Finished Mystery outlined on pages 68-71 eighty-eight signs which proved 'that the Lord's Second Advent occurred in the fall of 1874. Page 60 stated the 'Time of the End' had begun in 1799 AD. Today the Signs are said to show the 'time of the end' began in 1914, and the signs are applied since that time, ignoring the evidence of what they had taught happened before 1914, and

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

what actually did happen! For instance May 1, 1970, The Watchtower stated on page 270 "...the severity and deadliness of earthquakes have increased markedly since the 'time of the end' commenced for this old system in 1914. In fact, over 900,000 persons have died from earthquakes in this century...- However, the facts according to the article on 'Disasters' in Collier's Encyclopedia are that just two earthquakes before 1914 killed 520,000 or more than half the 900,000. (An earthquake on April 4, 1905 in Central India killed 370,000 and one on December 28, 1908 killed 150,000 in Sicily and Southern Italy.)

Apart from the fact that World War 1 broke out in 1914, neither the facts nor chronology related to Scripture support this date. If a world war alone is sufficient proof, then why is not the Second World War an equally important event, as it plunged the world into the Atomic Age with an unprecedented fear, and tragedy greater than 1914?

The date 1914 is therefore largely dependent upon chronology for its support, and this is very clearly shown to be in error.

HOW DOES THE WATCHTOWER ARRIVE AT 1914?

A period of 2,520 years called the "Times of the Gentiles" is said to have commenced with the end of the monarchy of Judah, when Zedekiah was removed from the throne and Jerusalem destroyed by Nebuchadnezzar, in 607 BC.

607 BC [2,520 Years] 1914 AD.

a. The 2520 Years. This is arrived at by applying the 'seven times' Nebuchadnezzar was insane to this period. A 'time' or year, if symbolic signifies three hundred and sixty (360) days. Seven times represents (7 x 360 = 2,520) symbolic 'days', or literal years. However, in Daniel 4:28, 33 this prophecy is shown to have been fulfilled upon Nebuchadnezzar, and had no connection with the "Times of the Gentiles". Bible interpretation does not allow for a prophecy to be made from a fulfilled prophecy, so this calculation is wrong from the outset.

b. The 607 BC Date. Jerusalem is said to have been destroyed at that date. The Watchtower calculates the date by working seventy years backwards from the date 537 BC when Cyrus allowed the Jews in Babylon to return to their land. However, Jerusalem was destroyed in 586 BC not 607 BC and Jeremiah speaks of the seventy years as a period of captivity which had already begun before the city was destroyed, Jeremiah 29:10, 16. The facts are that the captivity was in progress for almost twenty years before the city was finally destroyed by Nebuchadnezzar. Josephus says the temple then laid desolate for the fifty years (which remained) until its foundation was laid in the second year of Cyrus on their return home in approximately 536 BC. (see photo stat of Flavius Josephus against Apion, page 614 in this kit.) Chronologically and Biblically the Watchtower is in serious error over the 607 BC date which is the all-important starting date for 1914. Furthermore the chronological data given in Watchtower publications reveal this error very forcefully as they do not add up. When worked backwards, in a similar manner to which the Watchtower establishes 607 BC, the Society's chronology to 1914 AD is quickly shown to be 19 years in error!

WATCHTOWER CHRONOLOGY 19 YEARS IN ERROR

This is very clearly shown by using the books, "Babylon the Great is Fallen!" (B.G.F.) and "All Scripture is Inspired of God and Beneficial" (S. I.) An immediate contradiction and error is seen of 19 years! On pages 183-184 of (B.G.F.) Amel-Marduk or Evil-Merodach is said to have succeeded Nebuchadnezzar to Babylon's throne in 581 BC. He ruled for 2 years followed by Neriglissar 4 years, Labashi-Marduk nine months, and Nabonidus (B.G.F. page 230, and S.I. page 139-140) ruled 17 years until the 'absolute date' of 539 B.C. when Babylon fell. Adding these dates allowed by the Watchtower:-

Amel-Marduk	2 years
Neriglissar	4 years
Labashi-Marduk	9 months
Nabonidus	17 years

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

Total 23 years 9 months

(from October 539 BC = 562 BC)
Not 581 BC!

Working back from the absolute date of October 539 B.C. this time period brings one to 562 B.C. not 581 B.C. as the Watchtower teaches for the end of the reign of Nebuchadnezzar, a 19 year error!

a. Nebuchadnezzar's Reign

The Watchtower agrees that Nebuchadnezzar reigned for 43 years, although as shown they date his reign 19 years too soon. In "Aid to Bible Understanding- it states on page 1212, "Nebuchadnezzar ruled as king for forty-three years (624-581 B.C.E.)"

b. When Did Nebuchadnezzar Destroy Jerusalem?

The Bible says in his 19th year, (see 2 Kings 25:13-10). Since Nebuchadnezzar reigned for 43 years until 562 B.C., his 19th year would be 587/586 B.C. This year has been established by reliable archaeological as well as astronomical evidence, and is in complete harmony with the rest of Bible chronology. (See the data supplied in this kit on Chronology).

BABYLONIAN CHRONOLGY

HARMONISING TWO HISTORICAL AUTHORITIES ANCIENT & MODERN FLAVIUS JOSEPHUS AGAINST APION.

"Nabuchodonosor, after he had begun to build the fore mentioned wall, fell sick, and departed this life, when he had reigned forty-three years; whereupon his son Evilmerodach obtained the kingdom. He governed public affairs after an illegal and impure manner, and had a plot laid against him by Neriglissoor, his sister's husband, and was slain by him when he had reigned but two years. After he was slain, Neriglissoor, the person who plotted against him, succeeded him in the kingdom, and reigned four years; his son Laborosoarchod obtained the kingdom, though he was but a child, and kept it nine months; but by reason of the very ill temper and ill practices he exhibited to the world, a plot was laid against him also by his friends, and he was tormented to death.

After his death, the conspirators got together, and by common consent put the crown upon the head of Nabonnedus, a man of Babylon, and one who belonged to that insurrection. In his reign it was that the walls of the city of Babylon were curiously built with burnt brick and bitumen; but when he was come to the seventeenth year of his reign, Cyrus came out of Persia with a great army; and having already conquered all the rest of Asia, he came hastily to Babylonia. When Nabonnedus perceived he was coming to attack him, he met him with his forces, and joining battle with him was beaten, and fled away with a few of his troops with him, and was shut up within the city Borsippus.

Hereupon Cyrus took Babylon, and gave order that the outer walls of the city should be demolished, because the city had proved very troublesome to him, and cost him a great deal of pains to take it. He then marched away to Borsippus, to besiege Nabonnedus; but as Nabonnedus did not sustain the siege, but delivered himself into his hands, he was at first kindly used by Cyrus, who gave him Carmania, as a place for him to inhabit in, but sent him out of Babylonia. Accordingly Nabonnedus spent the rest of his time in that country, and there died."

21. These accounts agree with the true histories in our books; for in them it is written that Nebuchadnezzar, in the eighteenth year of his reign, laid our temple desolate, and so it lay in that state of obscurity for fifty years; but that in the second year of the reign of Cyrus its foundations were laid, and it was finished again in the second year of Darius.

Babylonian Chronology [628 BC TO AD 75], by Parker and Dubberstein

(An authority often quoted by the Watchtower Society) gives the following dates from archaeological tablets:

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

Nebuchadnezzar ascended the throne in Babylon, September 7, 605 B.C. He died during the first days of October, 562 B.C. Amel-Marduk (Evil-Merodach) began to reign October 8, 562 B.C. and his death may be fixed between August 7 and August 13, 560 B.C.

Nergal-Shar-Usur (Neriglissar) began to a reign by August 13, 560 B.C. and his death occurred in late April or early May, 556 B.C.

Labashi-Marduk began to reign May 3, 556 B.C. and the last record was on June 17, 556 B.C. He seems to have been recognized as king only in May and June, 556 B.C. and even then possibly not throughout Babylonia.

Josephus Against Apion 1, 20 states he ruled nine months. This could have been because of the confusion between the Greek numerals, 0 (9) and (2) months.

Nabunaid began to rule May 25, 556 B.C. (he was contender for the throne in May and by the end of June was sole ruler in Babylonia). His reign ended with the Fall of Babylon, October 12, 539 B.C.

TEMPLE DESOLATE FOR 50 YEARS (586-536 B.C.)

The 19th year of Nebuchadnezzar was 587/586 B.C. It had been desolate only 50 years when they returned and laid the foundation.

NEBUCHADNEZZAR'S 19TH YEAR – 587-586 B.C.

Nebuchadnezzar's 43-Year Reign
Watchtower Chronology

Despite all the evidence against the Watchtower Chronology it still clings to its untenable position, and upholds the mistake it made back in 1889 (when its chronology taught Adam was created in 4129 B.C. and Christ returned in 1874 A.D. etc. see chapter on 1975.) This was a mistake of insisting on a Seventy-year Desolation rather than a Seventy-year Captivity of Desolations!

Seventy-Year Captivity Versus Seventy-Year Desolation

The Bible emphasizes the seventy years servitude and captivity, Jeremiah 25:11; 29:10. This was Jeremiah's message in mentioning the 70 years. However, the Watchtower uses 2 Chronicles 36:21 for a 70-year desolation 'she kept Sabbath' in a desperate attempt to uphold the 607 BC date. They conclude that 537 B.C. was when the Jews were allowed to return to Jerusalem, and 70 years 'without an inhabitant' before this would make 607 B.C. the time when Jerusalem was destroyed. What the Watchtower fails to understand is that in Bible Chronology, a desolated or devastated place, does not necessarily mean one without an inhabitant i.e. Jeremiah 12:10.11 (NW) They have turned my desirable share into a wilderness of a desolate waste. One has made it a desolate waste; it was withered away; it is desolated to me. The whole land has been made desolate, because there is no man that has taken it to heart. This was a description of the land before the destruction of Jerusalem when people were still dwelling in it.

Ezekiel 33:27 (NW) "Surely the ones who are in the devastated places." Verse 24 (NW) "The inhabitants of these devastated places."

Thus the seventy years the land was desolated or devastated included the time from when the desolations had begun, although initially people were still living in the land, as they were before Jerusalem was finally destroyed, on through to, and during the time when the land was finally without an inhabitant.

THE DESOLATIONS OF JERUSALEM

Daniel speaks of desolations or devastations of Jerusalem. It was not one event, but a progression of devastations beginning in the third year of Jehoiakim king of Judah, which was the beginning of the reign of Nebuchadnezzar (see Jeremiah 25:1). Daniel was taken in this captivity. Daniel 1:1, 2 "In the third

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

year of the reign of Jehoiakim king of Judah came Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon unto Jerusalem, and besieged it And the Lord gave Jehoiakim king of Judah into his hand with part of the vessels of the house of God." This date is absolutely fixed as 605 BC. (See Professor Thiele's letter).

(Note: The N.W. Bible has added in Verse 2 – "In time Jehovah gave into his hand Jehoiakim the king of Judah. This is to suit the Watchtower Chronology, see the chapter in the New World Bible for similar additions).

Further desolations or devastations were carried out by Nebuchadnezzar for the next twenty years, as he progressively devastated more and more of Judah and took away further captives. 2 Kings 24:1-20, 25:11-10, 2 Chronicles 36:5-21.

Finally Jerusalem was destroyed in the nineteenth year of his reign. However, the Bible says that—"In the three and twentieth year of Nebuchadnezzar Nebuzaradan the captain of the guard carried away captive of the Jew seven hundred forty and five persons. " Jeremiah 52:30.

THE SEVENTY-YEAR CAPTIVITY

Bible chronology emphasizes that the seventy years was a time of captivity and serving the king of Babylon, at Babylon. Jeremiah 25:11 "And these nations shall serve the king of Babylon seventy years." Jeremiah 29:10 "For thus said the LORD, that after seventy years be accomplished at Babylon I will visit you-

It was after Daniel had been captive for seventy years at Babylon that he wrote Daniel 9:2 about what Jeremiah had written concerning the accomplishment of the seventy years. Watchtower chronology would have Daniel captive at Babylon for ninety years! The time of serving the king of Babylon must start from the time the first captives were taken to Babylon. After the destruction of Jerusalem many were taken to Egypt, Jeremiah among them.

Time Of Commencement Of The Seventy-Years (Captivity)

The Bible teaches that the seventy years, was a time of servitude and captivity, which began in the year Nebuchadnezzar became king of Babylon, and not as the Watchtower teaches, at the Fall of Jerusalem in Nebuchadnezzar's nineteenth year of his reign. Jeremiah 25:11; 29: 10.

a. It commenced BEFORE the Fall of Jerusalem.

Jeremiah wrote, before the city was destroyed, to the captives and urged them to continue to serve the king of Babylon because when 'seventy years be accomplished at Babylon' the Lord promised to visit them and to return them to their own land. Jeremiah 29:10. In verse 16, he went on to address the people 'that dwells in this city, and of your brethren that are not gone forth with, you into captivity'.

b. The Seventy Years was not dependent upon the Fall of Jerusalem.

It did not have to be destroyed if they would not rebel. False prophets were urging the Jews to rebel against Babylonian rule, and Jeremiah wrote urging them, "Hearken not unto them: serve the king of Babylon, and live: wherefore should this city be laid waste?" Jeremiah 27:17.

If they had not rebelled then seventy years of captivity, subjection and devastations/desolation by the Babylonians would have sufficed.

1. In the first captivity in 605 B.C., Nebuchadnezzar had already removed the 'blue bloods' Daniel 1:3 'the king's seed, and of the princes' when Daniel was taken captive and the Temple pillaged.

2. In the second captivity Nebuchadnezzar in the eighth year of his reign (598/597 B.C.) removed 'all Jerusalem, and all the princes, and all the mighty men of valor and all the craftsmen and smiths: none remained, save the poorest sort of the people of the land.' 2 Kings 24:12-14.

3. At Destruction of Jerusalem. In Jeremiah 27:17 he was advising those at Babylon and those remaining in Jerusalem not to rebel but to continue serving the king of Babylon until the seventy years would be accomplished. **Jeremiah** 29:10. However, they would not hearken unto him and Zedekiah later rebelled, so Nebuchadnezzar came down and in the nineteenth year of his reign he destroyed the city. (586 BC) and eventually these 'poorest sort of people' were also removed.

From this time until the Jews returned fifty years later, the temple lay in ruins. (See the photo stat of Josephus statement of the fifty years. This is not to be taken as Josephus final word, as he is not a reliable historian and often contradicts himself, nevertheless since the Watchtower also quotes him for support, this statement is an interesting one).

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

c. Before Jerusalem was destroyed, the desolations were said to have already taken place.

Jeremiah 25:18. "To wit, Jerusalem, and the cities of Judah, and the kings thereof, and the princes thereof, to make them a desolation, an astonishment, an hissing, and a curse; as it is this day."

(Some maintain that these words were added at a later date, that being so, **Jeremiah** 36:32 tells us it was done when Jehoiakim was still reigning, see Verses 28-32. This was at least eleven years before Jerusalem fell.)

WATCHTOWER CHRONOLOGY & SCHOLARSHIP

IS IT RELIABLE OR HONEST?
AN EXAMINATION OF THE DATE GIVEN IN THE BOOK, "BABYLON THE GREAT HAS
FALLEN" ON PAGE 134 CONCERNING JEHOIAKIM.

HARPER'S BIBLE DICTIONARY

PAUL J. ACHTEMEIER

1985

Harper And Row Publishers, San Francisco

JEHOIACHIN

Jehoiachin (ie-hoy'ah-kin; also called joiachin, jechoniah, jechoniah, and Coniah), one of the last two kings of Judah. He came to the throne in **597 BC** at the age of eighteen after the death of his father, Jehoiakim (2 Kings 24:8). At that time, Babylon besieged Jerusalem, and, after he had reigned only three months, he, his mother, wives, servants, princes, and officers surrendered themselves captive to Nebuchadnezzar (2 Kings 24:12; reflected in the prophecy of Jeremiah 22:24-30). The Babylonians also exiled ten thousand soldiers, officers, craftsmen, and smiths, leaving the land impoverished of skilled labor and administrators (2 Kings 24:14, 16; Jeremiah 24:1; 29:2). The Temple and palace treasures were also looted. According to Daniel, this exile included Daniel, Hananiah, Mishael, and Azariah (Daniel 1:1-7), and, according to Esther 2:6, it included Mordecai. Ezekiel was also among the captives (Ezek. 1:1-21; cf. Jeremiah 29:1).

Jeremiah prophesied the divine redemption of these captives of the first Babylonian exile (Jeremiah 24:4-7), but this would only come after a hiatus of seventy years (29:10-14; cf. vv. 1-7). Thus, he was at odds with Hananiah the son of Azzur, who predicted the immediate return of Jehoiachin and the exiles (28:1-4).

Several Babylonian food-rationing lists mention Jehoiachin's name or call him "King of Judah." Since he apparently surrendered quickly (2 Kings 24:12), he may have been treated fairly well. The Bible tells us (2 Kings 25: 27-30; Jeremiah 52:31-34) that in the thirty-seventh year of Jehoiachin's captivity (561 B.C.), Nebuchadnezzar's successor, Evil-merodach, raised his status to that of a valued court retainer. For a people then wholly exiled, this fact served to provide hope that the tide had turned, and that the promised redemption would not long be delayed. See also Jeremiah, The Book of. [Page 451]

NEBUCHADNEZZAR

Nebuchadnezzar II ruled Babylonia from **605 to 562 BC**. He was the son of Nabopolassar, founder of the Chaldean dynasty. Nebuchadnezzar II was the most powerful and longest reigning king of the Neo-Babylonian (625-539 B.C.) period. He brought the city of Babylon and the southern Mesopotamian state of Babylonia to the pinnacle of their power and prosperity.

The name Nabo-kudurri-usur means Nabu, preserve the offspring [lit., 'boundary stone']." From this Babylonian form, the alternate biblical spelling Nebuchadrezzar is taken.

The major competitors for power in the days of Nebuchadnezzar II were Media (northwest Iran) and Egypt, always with great-power ambitions for ports and trade in the Levant (Syria, Lebanon, Israel). Nebuchadnezzar's marriage to a daughter of the king of the Medes held the alliance with that power secure until after Nebuchadnezzar's death. As for Egypt, Pharaoh Neco suffered a defeat at the hands of Nebuchadnezzar at the city of Carchemish in 605 B.C., from which he did not recover (2 Kings 24:7)

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

Much information about the early rule of Nebuchadnezzar II comes from the Chronicles of Chaldean Kings (D. J. Wiseman., London: British Museum, 1956). However, of the forty-three years of the reign of Nebuchadnezzar II, only those up to 594 B.C. are preserved. Other records tell of the conquest of Tyre (571 BC; cf. Ezek. 27:12) and the invasion of Egypt in Nebuchadnezzar's thirty-seventh year (reported by a fragmentary British Museum tablet; see Ezek. 29:19-21). Accounts indicate that Nebuchadnezzar was an able but cruel ruler (cf. 2 Kings 25:7) who stopped at nothing to subdue peoples who stood in his path of conquest.

Ame1-Marduk (Evil-Merodach), Nebuchadnezzar's son, ruled from 562 to 560 B.C. According to accounts in 2 Kings 25:27-30 and Jeremiah 52:31-34 he recognized King Jehoiachin and allocated an allowance for him "all the days of his life." Babylonian clay tablets mentioning the disbursement of oil to Jehoiachin, five sons of the king of Judea and other Judeans confirm in a dramatic manner this Scriptural statement. [Page 691]

ZEDEKIAH

Zedekiah (zed-uh-kiah; Heb., "Yahweh is righteousness"). The last king of Judah, who was placed on the throne as a puppet ruler by Nebuchadnezzar after his first conquest of Jerusalem in 597 B.C. (2 Kings 24:17). In spite of the repeated warnings and criticisms of the prophet Jeremiah, reported in the narratives of Jeremiah 37-39 and 52, Zedekiah rebelled against his Babylonian overlords (2 Kings 24:20). As the result, Jerusalem was recaptured and destroyed (**586 BC**) and a bereaved and maimed Zedekiah was taken in fetters to Babylon (2 Kings 25:6-7). [Page 1160]

BABYLON THE GREAT HAS FALLEN, Page 134

In the third year after that, the third year of Jehoiakim's vassalage, he rebelled and stopped paying tribute Babylon. For this reason Nebuchadnezzar came against Jerusalem the second time, to punish the rebel king. That was in **618 BC** [See Harper's Bible Dictionary.]

WHEN WAS THE SEVENTY YEAR CAPTIVITY?

From 605 BC - 536 BC. (Bible chronology reckons inclusively. 2 Kings 18:9, 10 states three years was from the fourth year until the sixth year of Hezekiah. Similarly the three days Christ was dead, was from Friday afternoon until Sunday morning, i.e. any part of a year or day is counted as the whole.)

The decree of Cyrus releasing the Jews went out in the latter part of 537 B.C. Since the journey back to Jerusalem was about a four month journey, and they had to pack up etc... Bible students usually believe they would have planned to arrive after the winter, about the Spring of 536 BC.

ARCHAEOLOGICAL EVIDENCE DOES NOT SUPPORT 607 BC

During the reign of the Babylonian kings, clay tablets were dated with the date in the reign of the various kings. Thousands of these tablets have been found. Of particular importance are the first and last of those dating the reign of a particular king. -Babylonian Chronology, 626 B.C. A.D. 75" by Parker and Dubberstein has carefully listed the reigns of the kings from these tablets, and there are no gaps longer than a few days between their reigns. However, as one works back from the absolute date of 539 B.C. it soon becomes very apparent that the Watchtower chronology is 19 years in error.

ASTRONOMICAL EVIDENCE DOES NOT SUPPORT 607 BC

The clay tablet V.A.T. 4956 in the Berlin Museum outlines the positions of the heavenly bodies for twelve months and includes an eclipse. It states it was in the 37th regnal year of Nebuchadnezzar. The positions of the heavenly bodies for that period of time, can be identified accurately as the year April 568/April 567 B.C. The details given reoccur only every 40,000 years. The Watchtower has tried to discredit this tablet, but leading authorities state it gives ample information to make it completely reliable.

In 1983 I saw and handled this tablet in the Pergamon Museum in East Berlin while the curator

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

translated part of it including the name of Nebuchadnezzar.

PTOLEMY'S CANON

Professor E.R. Thiele, a world authority who is often quoted by the Watchtower Society stated in his book, "The Mysterious Numbers of the Hebrew Kings" page 44, 45 (1965 ed.) the canon of Ptolemy may be used as an historical guide with the fullest confidence. Since Ptolemy's canon gives precise and absolutely dependable data concerning the chronology of a period beginning with 747 B.C.

However, this very reliable historical guide is at variance with Watchtower chronology, so the Watchtower endeavors to discredit it, - but in doing so it takes a statement out of context from Professor Thiele's book and quotes him, ignoring all he has previously said in favor of Ptolemy's Canon. When they first did this in "The Watchtower" February 1, 1969 issue, Professor Thiele was very unhappy, as shown in the letter enclosed. Nevertheless, the Watchtower again quoted him the "Awake" magazine May 8, 1972, and the statement appears in the large standard work put out by the Watchtower in 1971 "Aid to Bible Understanding" on page 327.

One can examine the evidence, and draw their own conclusions, which leads one to ask...

IS THE WATCHTOWER HONEST?

This question is best left to the reader to answer after having examined the evidence. Apart from the above evidence, and much more like it that could be given, look at page 134 "Babylon the Great is Fallen!" It makes the statement that Nebuchadnezzar came against Jerusalem the second time to punish the rebel king. That was in 618 BC. See Harper's Bible Dictionary, by M.S. & J.L. Miller, edition 1952, page 306, under "Jehoiakim".

BABYLON THE GREAT HAS FALLEN, Page 134

In the third year after that, the third year of Jehoiakim's vassalage, he rebelled and stopped paying tribute Babylon. For this reason Nebuchadnezzar came against Jerusalem the second time, to punish the rebel king. That was in **618 BC** [See Harper's Bible Dictionary.]

However, when one checks this book, they find that the date does not appear in the article at all, but a date many years later, which the Watchtower does not accept! (see photo stat copies of the pages of the above quoted books. I sent specially to America to get the 1952 edition of Harper's Bible Dictionary. A reduced photograph of the front page of the book is also included.)

When the Watchtower is asked concerning what they have done, they reply that they are only referring to the incident and not the date! This explanation of course, is only accepted by the most loyal of Jehovah's Witnesses. Many are very disgusted with this type of thing.

In his book, "Crisis of Conscience" (1983) page 25-26, Raymond Franz, a former member of the Governing Body and an author of the "Aid" book described how the problem of chronology was dealt with:

"When the subject of "Chronology" was assigned to me this similarly led to serious questions. Months of research were spent on this one subject of "Chronology" and it resulted in the longest article in the "Aid" publication. Much of the time was spent endeavoring, to find some proof, some backing in history, for the 607 BC date so crucial to our calculations for 1914. Charles Ploeger, a member of the headquarters staff, was at that time serving as a secretary for me and he searched through the libraries of the New York city area for anything that might substantiate that date historically.

We found absolutely nothing in support of 607 BC. All historians pointed to a date twenty years later. Though I found this disquieting, I wanted to believe that our chronology was right in spite of all the contrary evidence. Thus, in preparing the material for the 'Aid' book, much of the time and space was spent in trying to weaken the credibility of the archeological and historical evidence that would make erroneous our 607 BC date and give a different starting point for our calculations and therefore an ending date different from 1914."

Franz went on to describe further fruitless efforts to find any flaws or weakness in the astronomical data and many texts that proved the Society's 607 B.C.E. date was incorrect. He then

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

continues:

“Like an attorney faced with evidence he cannot overcome, my effort was to discredit or weaken confidence in the witnesses from ancient times who presented such evidence, the evidence of historical texts relating to the Neo-Babylonian Empire. The arguments I presented were honest ones, but I know that their intent was to uphold a date for which there was no historical support.”

(Readers are urged to get a copy of this book, “Crisis of Conscience”, for it is virtually the conflict of a man who wants to be honest with God, but also loyal to the teachings of the Watchtower Society.)

Does such loyalty to the Society produce dishonesty in the final outcome? Is this the major problem one has in trying to help a Witness see the errors of the Watchtower Society?

JEHOIACHIN'S RELEASE

Jeremiah 52:31 states that in the 37th year of Jehoiachin's captivity, that Evil-Merodach in his first year of his reign, released him out of prison.

If you refer to the enclosed chart “Babylonian Chronology.” and “Babylon the Great has Fallen” page 184, you will notice Evil-Merodach (or Amel-Marduk) reigned for TWO years, Neriglissar for FOUR years, then LabashiMarduk only a few months, was followed by Nabonidus (Belshazzar his son ruled coregently) until the Fall of Babylon on the absolute date of 539 BC. (Nabonidus ruled for SEVENTEEN years - footnote BGF page 230).

However, working back from this absolute date 539 BC we find Evil Merodach began to reign late in 562 BC. Then working back further from his first year, 37 years of Jehoiachin's captivity would bring one to the date 598/597 BC as to the time he was taken captive. The Watchtower will not accept this date, and sets 618/617 BC for this date in “Babylon the Great” page 685, and 134,135. (On page 134 Harper's Bible Dictionary is used to support this Watchtower date, see above for further details!)

THE SEVENTY YEAR DESOLATION OF THE TEMPLE

This is a different time period from the seventy years of captivity. It began approximately twenty years later and continued approximately twenty years after the people returned home from the captivity and were involved in the final completion of the temple. 605 BC Captivity begins, 586 BC **Jeremiah** and Temple destroyed, 536 BC Jews return, lay temple foundations, 517 BC Temple is still “waste”.

a. Urged to Complete the Temple.

When the Jews returned from their captivity in Babylon, they laid the foundation of the Temple (c 536 BC) but then concerned themselves more with building their own homes than the house of God. When almost twenty years had expired there was still no Temple for the worship of God. Through the prophets Haggai and Zechariah in the early reign of Darius 1, God urged His people to complete the Temple which had been laying ‘waste’ and had called down His displeasure “these seventy years”:

Haggai 1:4, 9, 10 (NW) “Is it time for YOU yourselves to dwell in YOUR paneled houses, while this house is waste? By reason of my house that is waste. Therefore over YOU the heavens kept back their dew, and the earth itself kept its yield.

Zechariah 1:12,16 (NW) “O Jehovah of armies, how long will you yourself not show mercy to Jerusalem and to the cities of Judah, whom you have denounced these seventy years? Therefore this is what Jehovah has said, ‘I shall certainly return to Jerusalem with mercies, My own house will be built in her.”

Zechariah 7:5(NW) “When You fasted and there was a walling In the fifth month and in the seventh month, and this for seventy years.”

b. Watchtower Chronology for Completion of Temple.

In the seventh month (Ethaniam or Tishri) of the year 537 B.C.E. the altar was set up, and in the following year the foundation of the new temple was laid. As Solomon had done, the builders hired Sidonians and Tyrians to bring cedar timbers from Lebanon. (Ezra 3:7) The building work progressed for about fifteen years until It came under official ban of the king of Persia due to accusations written to the king by opposers, particularly the Samaritans. -Ezra chap. 4.

The temple builders weakened, but Jehovah sent his prophets Haggai and Zechariah to stir them to renew their efforts, and in the second year of Darius 1 (520/519 B.C.E.) a decree was made upholding

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

Cyrus' original order and commanding that monies be provided from the royal treasury, to supply what the builders and priests needed. (Ezra 5:1, 2; 6:1-12) The building work resumed promptly and the house of Jehovah was completed on the third day of Adar in the sixth year of Darius (probably about March 5/6 of 515 B.C.E.), after which the Jews Inaugurated the rebuilt temple and held the Passover, Ezra 6:13-22.

c. A Seventy or Ninety year Desolation of the Temple?

If according to the Watchtower chronology, the Temple was destroyed in 607 BC and rebuilt in 515 BC, it would have been desolate for over ninety years. However, working back with 'these seventy years' spoken of in Zechariah 1:12, before the Temple was completed this Bible chronology supports the date 586 BC for the destruction of the Temple and Jerusalem!

SUMMARY:

The structure of Watchtower chronology has been in error since its beginning. The 1914 date is no exception, with its basic date of 607 BC, which should be 586 BC to harmonize with the Bible chronology on:

- a. SEVENTY YEAR CAPTIVITY. Beginning before **Jeremiah** destroyed)
- b. JEHORACHINIS CAPTIVITY. (37 yrs. before Evil-Merodach)
- c. THE TEMPLE DESOLATE FOR 70 YRS. (Not Ninety!)

The errors of Watchtower chronology have led many to find the Truth. (See Max Hatton's letter in this Kit).

THE ASTRONOMICAL DIARY VAT 4956

The archaeological tablet VAT 4956 is an astronomical diary. It records the observations of the moon and planets during the entire 37th reigning year of Nebuchadnezzar. There are about thirty observations which are so exactly described that modern astronomers can easily fix the exact dates when they were made. All the observations of the moon and five planets could only have occurred in the year 568-567 BC, and will not occur again in the same sequence for another 40,000 years!

It clearly establishes that the 37th reigning year of Nebuchadnezzar was 568-567 BC and that the time when he destroyed Jerusalem was 586-587 BC, and not 607 BC as taught by the Watchtower Society.

The author, E. B. Price, holding the VAT 4956 tablet in the East Berlin Museum. He is pointing to the name of Nebuchadnezzar, on the top of the tablet, which can be very clearly read by those able to read the cuneiform writing.

The Babylonian kings had the observations of the moon and planets recorded on clay tablets, for each year of their reigns. These are called Astronomical Diaries, and over 1,200 fragments have been found of such diaries. However, the most important find was that recording the observations of the moon and the five planets during the 37th reigning year of Nebuchadnezzar. It was a copy of an original, which was very faithfully copied to the extent the copyist even added the comment of where the original had been "broken off" or "erased". There is no reason whatsoever to doubt its authenticity, and the information it records fits perfectly with the location of the moon and planets during the year 568/567 B.C.E. It also harmonizes with the information given in regard to the chronology of the period by historians such as Berossus, and the many documents contemporary with the Neo-Babylonian era such as chronicles, royal inscriptions, business documents and even contemporary Egyptian documents. The evidence is completely overwhelming that the chronology of the Watchtower Society is deeply in error.

THE GENTILE TIMES RECONSIDERED

By CARL OLOF JONSSON

Hart Publishers Ltd. of Lethbridge, Alta. Canada and Good News Defenders of La Jolla, CALIFORNIA, U.S.A. for Christian Koinonia International. Distributed by Good News Defenders, PO Box 8007, La Jolla, CALIFORNIA. 92038 USA.

Carl Olof Jonsson was an elder of a Jehovah's Witness congregation in Sweden. As he intelligently began to research the chronology of the Watchtower Society he found many facts that the

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

Society's publications had either ignored or glossed over. As he found more and more problems with the Society's chronology, he presented the Governing Body in Brooklyn, New York, with the data. Unable to answer the problems the Society brought him before a Swedish Jehovah's Witness -judicial committee" and he was then disfellowshipped or excommunicated for having questioned the Society's "Bible Chronology". That was in July 1982. The next year he had the above book printed, which is virtually a compilation of the material that he assembled and was found unanswerable!

The above book is the best that I have ever read dealing with the problems of the Watchtower Society's chronology. For every serious student of this subject, this book is a must!

It deals with the history of the interpretation of the term "Gentile Times". Seventh-day Adventists would find this section very interesting, as it appeared in the Millerite Movement, but did not come part of this church's teachings in the years after the church was organized in 1863.

In the second chapter the author deals with the chronology of the Neo-Babylonian period. He has excellent material on the ancient historians. He then deals with the Chronicles and other historical records, such as the Uruk King List and the Royal Inscriptions. One of these royal inscriptions known as the Adda Guppi stele, is quoted in the Aid book on pages 236-237 to show how fragmentary and unreliable such broken tablets or steles were. However there were other duplicate steles which were unbroken, but the writer of the Aid book either did not know of this or chose to ignore it. (See opposite page concerning this.) Jonsson has some excellent material on the business and administrative documents of that era, particularly dealing with the family of Egibi. The cost of the book alone is worth the information he gives in this section.

When he deals with the Astronomical Diaries, he deals very fully with the VAT 4956 tablet, and gives excellent proof of its authenticity. He also answers the questions raised by the Watchtower Society to discredit it. The above is just part of the information of this 226 page book. The facts presented are overwhelming and conclusive. This book is difficult to obtain in Australia now. It could be worthwhile writing to the distributors whose address is given above to be able to get a copy of this excellent book.

AN ACTIVE WITNESS DISCOVERS THE ERRORS OF 607 BC

Max Hatton was a Shire Clerk in Denmark, Western Australia, when he and his wife become Jehovah's Witnesses. When a call was made for Witnesses to move to Melbourne, where the need was great, he resigned his position, sold up his home and moved to this large city, where he became the Ministry School Servant of the Broadmeadows congregation. After a Seventh-day Adventist pointed out to him the error of the Watchtower chronology and teaching of 1914, he spent three years studying and fighting the Scriptural and secular evidence. Writing to another Jehovah's Witness of his experience he says:

Dear M

"I set out to support the Society and to prove the others wrong. What shocks I was in for! After three years of study I finally hid to admit that what the Society teaches on chronology and the signs of Christ's PA ROUSIA Is entirely unscriptural and It contradicts all the positive evidence that is available for the period of the New Babylonian Empire. Believe me, I did not want to arrive at this decision and I fought it solidly for about three years. However, the Scriptural evidence is so clear that no other decision is possible when all the Scriptures which relate to the period are considered. The secular evidence is just as positive.

'I had written to the Society on several occasions begging help with the problems involved but they were not able to provide any. A Circuit Servant who had read copies of my correspondence to and from the Society admitted that the Society had not been able to help me and that he was not able to either. He said, 'If the Society cannot answer your questions, how can you expect me to?' A letter from the Brooklyn office of the Society dated August 23, 1964, counseled me:

"give less attention to this matter of chronology, although it has its proper place in God's word, and concern yourself more with the facts of the day which are in fulfillment and in corroboration of Bible prophecy."

"Like so many others beside J.W.'S I could see that the signs of Matthew 24 etc., are being fulfilled but the question is, "Do they prove Christ to be PRESENT OR COMING?" The question revolves around the word PA ROUSIA found in Matthew 243. Should it be translated PRESENCE or should it be

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

translated COMING? Authorities on the Greek of the New Testament prove that the word can be translated either way. Can we discover from the Bible itself how it should be translated? I am quite positive that in its context PA ROUSIA must be translated COMING in Matthew 243. Consider the following.

“The followers of Christ expected that He would set up the Kingdom at His first Advent. (Luke 19: 11) Jesus made it clear to them that He must first go away but that He would return as King. (Luke 19:12) After His resurrection and just prior to His ascension to heaven, they asked if He was going to restore the kingdom then. (Acts 1: 6) The Watchtower dated September 15, 1964, page 576, says, ‘they had no idea that He would rule as a glorious spirit from the heavens and therefore did not know that His second presence would be invisible.’

“The last paragraph is of vital importance in this study because it was the disciples who asked Jesus, (Matthew 243) what would be the signs of the destruction of the Temple and thus Jerusalem, (which occurred in AD 70) His PA ROUSIA and the end of the World or Age. It is clear that the disciples associated the destruction of Jerusalem, Christ's second coming and the end of the World, together. A little thought will make It clear that they wanted to know how they could tell when these things were about to take place. The signs were to precede the events. This is obvious for they did not want signs to tell them that Jerusalem had already been destroyed. They asked for the signs that would precede the event and as they associated the three events together it is obvious that the signs would precede the PA ROUSIA and the end of the world. It is also obvious that the Society is wrong and Christ never did commence an invisible PRESENCE as king in 1914.

“This question of the correctness of the Watchtower teachings related to 1914 is not just an Interesting matter. The very existence of the Society Itself depends upon 1914. For example:

“Evidences are now conclusive that Jesus Christ was enthroned in heaven in 1914 C.E., and that he accompanied Jehovah to his temple in 1918 C.E., when judgment began with the house of God. (1 Peter 4:17) After cleansing those belonging to this house who were alive on earth, Jehovah poured out his spirit upon them and assigned them the responsibility of serving as his sole visible channel, through whom alone spiritual instruction was to come. Those who recognize Jehovah's visible theocratic organization therefore, must recognize and accept this appointment of the ‘faithful and discrete slave’ and be submissive to it.” (emphasis supplied The Watchtower, October 1, 1967, page 590.)

“Now you will know without my telling you how submissive the JW are to the Watchtower Society. You will also know how much they are dependent upon the Watchtower publications for knowledge. Whatever the Watchtower says is correct. But what if Christ did not begin an invisible PRESENCE in 1914? Obviously He did not appoint any visible channel, through whom alone spiritual instruction was to come’ in 1918. If 1914 is wrong, and it is, then the Society has no excuse for its existence! It is just another false religion. It is a false religion and for this reason we left it.

(Signed) Max Hatton

The writer of this letter later became a Seventh-day Adventist. Today he is an ordained pastor of the Seventh-day Adventist Church, having given over thirty years of faithful service in ministry in Australia and New Zealand.

12. The Second Coming of Christ

THE BACKGROUND OF THE WATCHTOWER TEACHING

After the 1844 Disappointment, a group of date-setting Adventists (not Seventh-day Adventists who have always opposed date-setting!) set the date of October 22, 1874 for the Return of Christ. They reasoned that when He came the first time, it was thirty years before He took up His effective ministry, so similarly His effective coming would take place thirty years after October 22, 1844. It was to one of these meetings that Pastor C. T. Russell went and accepted this teaching. When the time came and went and Christ had not returned visibly as expected, they too were disappointed. Eighteen months later in 1876, Russell contacted the leader of the New York date-setting Adventists, a Mr. N. H. Barbour, and he explained to Pastor Russell, that Christ's Coming did take place in 1874, but it was an invisible Coming.

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

He took his cue from the "Emphatic Diaglott" - a Christadelphian publication, which translated coming in Matthew 24:27, 37, 39 etc. as presence, from the Greek word parousia.

Pastor Russell then began to teach that Christ had come, and was invisibly present. He soon began to publish a magazine, Zion's Watchtower and Herald of Christ's Presence.

Despite all the Biblical evidence against such a teaching, and even warnings by Christ himself, from that time forward one of the cardinal teachings of the Watchtower Society has been that Christ's return or Second Coming is past and invisible!

CHRIST'S WARNING AGAINST THIS TEACHING

Jesus warned against such teachings in the last days, when He said in Matthew 24:23-
"Then if any man shall say unto you, Lo, here is Christ, or there; believe it not."

Despite such warnings the Watchtower Society for over a century has been teaching that Christ is here.

CHRIST'S RETURN IN 1874

For over fifty years the Watchtower Society taught that Christ's Return or Second Coming took place in 1874. Pastor Russell taught no other date for this event. Rutherford was teaching it in the Society's publications as late as 1929:

"The Scriptural proof is that the second presence of the Lord Jesus Christ began in 1874 AD. This proof is specifically set out in the booklet entitled Our Lord's Return." Prophecy, (1929) pages 65-66.

The fact that the Watchtower Society was teaching this date fifteen years after 1914, is an embarrassment, since they believe they have spiritual eyes of understanding to discern His presence, which they now teach took place in 1914 not 1874, despite all the "Scriptural proof" claimed in such statements as the one above to prove the event took place in 1874. Having taught such errors for such a long time (over fifty years) one wonders how the Society can claim to be that faithful and discreet slave to give them their food at the proper time, of Matthew 24:45?

CHRIST'S RETURN IN 1914

It was during the 1920's the date 1914 began to be presented as the time of Christ's presence or coming. Publications such as The Finished Mystery (1917), The Harp of God (1921) only taught the 1874 date for this event. Let God Be True (1946) page 188-188 states: "The meaning of parousia is more exact than that commonly contained in the English word coming. It does not mean that he is on the way, or has promised to come, but that he has already arrived and is present."

In 1958, From Paradise Lost to Paradise Regained, p.200 stated: "The King arrived in His glory AD 1914."

Finding this teaching difficult to uphold, the Society found it necessary to alter its emphasis to Christ turning His attention towards the earth. Thus having lost many members over this teaching, the interesting interpretation and explanation of Christ's return is given in You Can Live Forever in Paradise on Earth (1982) Page 147.

"Christ's return does not mean that he literally comes back to this earth. Rather it means that he takes Kingdom power towards this earth and turns his attention to it. Bible evidence shows that In the year 1914 CE. God's time arrived for Christ to return and begin ruling. Since Christ's return is invisible, is there a way to confirm that it has really occurred. Yes, there is. Christ Himself gave a visible "sign" by which we may know that He is invisibly present and the end of the world is near."

IS NEAR OR THAT HE IS HERE?

The signs of Christ's coming show He is near not here! In Matthew 24, the chapter tells of the signs of Christ's coming, but:

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

1. Verse 23 warns of people stating Christ is here or present, when the signs are being fulfilled.
2. Verses 32-33 tells of the parable of the fig tree, where Jesus emphasized its putting forth of leaves showed that summer is nigh, and applied it that he is near even at the doors. He never said the signs were to show He is here, or in the doors!
3. Verses 42 and 44 warn that one needs to be ready, because they do not know when He will arrive. If the Lord has already come and is present then there is no need to watch.

DID CHRIST COME IN EITHER 1874 OR 1914?

The answer is an emphatic No! This is a teaching unique to the Watchtower Society and is ludicrous the more one studies the teachings of the Bible, which show that Christ's Return as King of Kings and Lord of Lords in power and great glory will be a visible return. When He came the first time, a multitude of angels in great glory sang to the shepherds on the hills of Bethlehem. At His second return all the angels of heaven will accompany Him and He will be seen by "every eye". His arrival will be announced with the voice of the archangel and the trump of God.

Christ has not invisibly returned because:

1. Every eye did not see Him. Revelation 1:7. This is not restricted to those with eyes of spiritual understanding, because Matthew 24:30 shows that "all the tribes of the earth" also see Him and they have no such spiritual understanding.

2. 1 Thessalonians 4:16, 17 says that at Christ's parousia both the 'dead in Christ' who are resurrected and the living will be caught up together in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air. If the Society's teachings are correct and the "remnant class" were resurrected in 1918, then the living members of the "remnant class" should have been caught up with them to be with the Lord. The Society has never ever claimed this to have happened.

3. The wicked were not destroyed by the brightness of His coming, (Parousia) 2 Thessalonians 2:8, and this destruction is to be literal as the destruction of the flood and the---day Lot went out of Sodom", Luke 17:26-30, Matthew 24:37-40.

4. The Memorial Service is only to be celebrated "until He comes". 1 Corinthians 11:26. However, it is still celebrated.

5. If Christ has come, then we no longer have an advocate or mediator, and no one could be saved.

13. The Parousia of Christ

The Greek word Parousia, is only one of at least ten leading Greek words used to describe the second return of Christ. This word is used by the Watchtower Society to teach that Christ's return/arrival/presence was invisible and took place in 1914. Contrary to this teaching is the fact that the ancient Greeks used the word parousia to describe the arrival or visit of a royal person or King. It was always understood to be a literal visible personal visit, usually accompanied with pomp and much splendor. This is the way the Bible describes Christ's future return, and the other Greek words in the Bible also support this.

AS UNDERSTOOD BY THE ANCIENT GREEKS

In his book, LIGHT FROM THE ANCIENT EAST -The New Testament Illustrated by Recently Discovered Texts of the Graeco-Roman World, the author Adolf Deissmann has this to say about parousia on pages 368-369:

"From the Ptolemaic period down into the 2nd cent. A.D. we are able to trace the word in the East as a technical expression for the arrival or the visit of the king or the emperor. The parousia of the sovereign must have been something well known even to the people, as shown by the facts that special payments in kind and taxes to defray the cost of the parousia were exacted, that in Greece a new era was reckoned from the parousia of the Emperor Hadrian, that all over the world advent-coins were struck after a parousia of the emperor, and that we are even able to quote examples of advent-sacrifices.

The subject of parousia dues and taxes in Egypt has been treated in detail by Wilken. The oldest passage he mentions is in the Flinders Petrie Papyrus 11. 39 e, of the 3rd cent. BC, where, according to his

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

ingenious interpretation, contributions are noted for a crown of gold to be presented to the king at his parousia.”

THE PAROUSIA OF QUEEN CLEOPATRA

An interesting illustration of the use of the word parousia, is given in the book, THE VOCABULARY of the GREEK TESTAMENT, Illustrated from the Papyri and Other Non-Literary Sources, by J. H. Moulton and Geo. Milligan. Under “Parousia- on page 497:

“What, however, more especially concerns us in connection with the NT usage of parousia is the quasi-technical force of the word from Ptolemaic times onwards to denote the “visit” of a King, Emperor, or other person in authority.”

The article then goes on to give illustrations of such visits in Greek literature. On one such papyri, was a description of the royal visit of Queen Cleopatra and King Ptolemy Philometor, to Memphis in their kingdom of Egypt. This was called a parousia.

PAROUSIA = A VISIBLE LITERAL PRESENCE

In the above illustrations of the use of this word parousia in the Greek, before and during the writing of the Greek Scriptures, it is obvious that it was used in the context of the royal person being literally and visibly present. The arrival of such a person was only anticipated because it was expected they would be visibly present. To use this word to describe an invisible presence of Jesus Christ since 1914 completely takes it out of the context in which the word was known and used.

PAROUSIA AS USED IN THE BIBLE

Paul uses the word in connection with his being literally and visibly present with his people from the time of his arrival among them, 2 Corinthians 10:10. (See also these texts, 1 Corinthians 16:17, 2 Corinthians 7:6, 7; and, Philippians 1:26; 2:12) These verses leave no doubt that it was understood as a personal literal visitor presence.

Now note how the Bible writers use the word when they are describing Christ's return: Matthew 24:27 (NW) “For just as the lightning comes out of eastern parts and shines over to western parts, so the presence of the Son of man will be. “

1 Thessalonians 4:15-17 (NW) “That we the living who survive to the presence of the Lord shall in no way precede those who have fallen asleep [in death]; because the Lord himself will descend from heaven with a commanding call, with an archangel's voice and with God's trumpet, and those who are dead in union with Christ will rise first. Afterward we the living who are surviving will, together with them, be caught away in clouds to meet the Lord in the air; and thus shall always be with [the] Lord, 2 Thessalonians 2:8 (KJV) “And then shall that Wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming (presence).”

These texts certainly do not give any room for an invisible secret return of Christ in 1914. No wonder this teaching of the Watchtower is causing more and more of its thinking members to question it, and has lead thousands out of the Watchtower Society.

MANY OTHER GREEK WORDS ARE USED

Parousia is only one of many Greek words used to describe Christ's second coming. Note some of the others:

APOKALUPTO:

2 Thessalonians 1:7 (NW). “at the revelation of the Lord Jesus from heaven with his powerful angels.,,

1 Peter 1:7 (NW). “at the revelation of Jesus Christ.”

Luke 17:29-30(NW) “But on the day that Lot came out of Sodom it rained fire and sulfur from heaven and destroyed them all. The Same way it will be on that day when the son of man is to be revealed.”

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

EPIPHANEIA:

1 Timothy 6:14 (NW) "until the manifestation of our Lord Jesus Christ."

2 Timothy 4:8 (NW) "...there is reserved for me the crown of righteousness, which the Lord ... will give me as a reward in that day, yet not only to me, but also to all those who have loved his manifestation."

Titus 2:13 (NW) "... while we wait for the happy hope and glorious manifestation of the great God and of [the] Savior of us Christ Jesus."

ERCHOMAR:

Matthew 24:30 (NW). "... all the tribes of the earth ... will see the Son of man coming on the clouds of heaven with power and great glory."

Matthew 26:64 (NW). "...YOU will see the Son of man ... coming on the clouds of heaven."

John 14:3 (NW). "...I am coming again and will receive YOU home to myself, that where I am YOU also may be."

1 Corinthians 11:26 (NW). "YOU keep proclaiming the death of the Lord, until he arrives."

Revelation 1:7 (NW). "Look! He is coming with the clouds, and every eye will see him..."

OPTOMAI:

Hebrews 9:28 (NW). "and the second time he appears."

(The Kingdom Interlinear says "... he will be made visible...")

PHANIEROO:

1 Peter 5:4 (NW). "And when the chief shepherd has been made manifest, YOU will receive the unfadable crown of glory."

HUPOSTREPHO:

Luke 19:12 (NW). "...to secure kingly power...and to return..."

ANALUO:

Luke 12:36 (NW). "waiting for their master when he returns".

HIEKO:

Revelation 2:25 (NW). "hold fast what YOU have until I come."

PAROUSIA, AS UNDERSTOOD BY MODERN GREEKS

Attendance at school each day is called by modern Greeks a parousia. This demands them to go to school and be literally, Personally and visibly present. For a student to say they attended school, but their parousia was invisible, or they were there in spirit, or had turned their attention to the school, would be ludicrous. What the Watchtower Society tries to teach about Christ's return or parousia being invisible, or a turning of his attention to the earth is just as ludicrous!

In this presentation pictures, illustrations or charts are invaluable in portraying the events from the Second Coming of Christ at Armageddon, through the period of the thousand years when all the saved from the earth are in heaven and the earth is desolate. At the close of this period the Holy City descends with all the saved back to this earth, the final judgment takes place and the earth is restored to its Paradise condition, for all eternity. Everything is perfect. Christ has restored all that was lost]

14. The Millennium

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

A. At the Beginning

1. ARMAGEDDON.

The seven last plagues of Revelation 16 are poured out. (They all come in 'one day' Revelation 18:13, which in Bible prophecy can mean "a year".) Armageddon is the 6th of those plagues. Christ comes as a thief at Armageddon, Revelation 16:14-16. The 7th plague and His return finishes the battle of Armageddon.

2. CHRIST'S RETURN.

He comes as King of Kings and Lord of Lords (Revelation 19:16, with all the holy angels (Matthew 25:31) where He will appear in the clouds of heaven in power and great glory, announced by the voice of the Archangel and God's trumpet, 1 Thessalonians 4:16. (See also previous chapters.)

3. WICKED DESTROYED.

Luke 17:26-30. As the wicked were all destroyed in the Flood and at Sodom, so they are at Christ's return. Revelation 6:16-17. They cry for the mountains and rocks to fall on them, but their destruction comes as a result of the intense brightness (Greek Ephiphareia - literally, out-shining) of Christ's parousia.

4. FIRST RESURRECTION.

1 Thessalonians 4:16. The dead in Christ are raised. These are all those who believed in Him. John 6:40 (NW) "...everyone that beholds the Son and exercises faith in him should have everlasting life and I will resurrect him at the last day." Men of old like Abraham and Isaac etc. are included. See Hebrews 11:10, 16, 35, 40.

5. SAVED TAKEN TO HEAVEN

1 Thessalonians 4:16-17. The saved who are resurrected and those living are together caught away in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air. Revelation 7:9; 14:13. Both the great crowd and the 144,000 are in heaven "in sight of the throne" see the Kingdom Interlinear. Revelation 19:1. The great crowd is "in heaven" New World Bible.

B. During Thousand Years

1. THE EARTH IS DESOLATE.

Isaiah 24:1 (KJV) "Behold, the Lord makes the earth empty."

Jeremiah 4:23-27 (KJV) "I beheld the earth, and to, it was without form and void (empty) ... and, lo, there was no man, the fruitful place was a wilderness, and all the cities thereof were broken down at the presence of the Lord, and by his fierce anger. For thus hath the Lord said, 'The whole land shall be desolate:'"

The above is a picture of what the earth becomes as the result of Armageddon and the presence of Christ at His Coming.

2. WICKED ARE DEAD ON THE EARTH.

When Christ returned:

a. Wicked Living Were Destroyed. They were destroyed at Christ's Coming or presence. (See No.3 in the previous column.)

b. Wicked Dead Were Not Raised. Only the Dead in Christ were resurrected. The wicked dead remained in their graves in the sleep of death.

So all the wicked are dead on the earth and remain that way after Christ returns. **Jeremiah** 25:31, 33 (NW) "He must personally put himself in judgment with all flesh. And those slain by Jehovah will certainly come to be in that day from one end of the earth clear to the other end of the earth. They will not be bewailed, neither will they be gathered up or be buried. As manure on the surface of the ground they will become. (Note they are not bewailed, gathered, or buried because there was no man alive on the earth during this period to do this.)

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

3. THE SAVED IN HEAVEN. (See previous Column No.5.)

4. SATAN IS BOUND.

Revelation 20:1-3, gives a picture of Satan bound on the earth. He has no one to tempt and is in a solitary prison on the earth for the 1000 years.

D. At its Close

1. HOLY CITY DESCENDS.

Revelation 21:2-3 (NW) "I saw also the holy city, New Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God and he will reside with them, and they will be his peoples. And God himself will be with them."

Revelation 3:12 and 21:10 also mention this city descending from heaven. (It has already descended before the events of Revelation 20:9, because the wicked on earth surround it.)

2. SECOND RESURRECTION.

John 5:28-29 (NW) "All those in the memorial tombs will hear his voice and come out, those who did good to a resurrection of life, and those who practiced vile things to a resurrection of judgment."

This is now the resurrection of the wicked to judgment.

Revelation 20:5 (NW) "The rest of the dead did not come to life until the thousand years were ended." Since all the saved were in the first resurrection of life "the rest of the dead- are the wicked who are resurrected at the end of the 1000 years.

(Note: The Bible never teaches that anyone will be resurrected during the 1000 years as the Watchtower Society does!)

3. SATAN LOOSED.

Since he now has someone to tempt, the wicked who have been resurrected. He leads them up against the city. Revelation 20:7.

4. CITY SURROUNDED

Revelation 20:9 "And they advanced over the breadth of the earth and encircled the beloved city."

5. FINAL JUDGMENT.

Revelation 20:11-15 gives a picture of the scene of the final judgment. At its close the wicked are burnt.

6. WICKED DESTROYED.

Revelation 20:9 "...fire came down out of heaven and devoured them."

The Bible gives a picture of eternal punishment, not eternal punishing. (See Malachi 4:1-3)

D. After and for All Eternity!

1. PARADISE RESTORED.

God will do this not man!

Revelation 21:5. The one seated on the throne said: (NW) "Look, I am making all things new."

2. A LITERAL, REAL CITY!

Revelation 21:11-21. The city has walls, streets, foundations, gates etc...

Verse 24, 25 (NW) "...and the kings of the earth will bring their glory into it. And its large gates will not be closed."

(How could this happen unless it was a literal city? It is certainly not the 144,000 as the WTS says.)

3. THE THRONE OF GOD IN IT.

Revelation 22:3 (NW) "But the throne of God and of the Lamb will be in it [the city]."

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

4. GOD WILL DWELL WITH THE SAVED ON EARTH.

Revelation 21:1 "And God himself will be with them."

The Bible is very clear it is not a representative but God Himself!

5. THEY WILL SEE HIS FACE.

Revelation 22:4 (NW) "and they will see his face..."

6. HOMES WILL BE BUILT.

Isaiah 65:21-25. The saved will build homes etc. on the earth.

7. THE SABBATH WILL BE KEPT.

Isaiah 66:23 (NW) "And it will certainly occur that from Sabbath to Sabbath all flesh will come in to bow down before me, Jehovah has said."

8. SIN ETERNALLY FINISHED.

Nahum 1:9 "Affliction shall not rise up the second time."

The plan of Salvation has now been completed. All that was lost in Eden, now, our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ has restored! Through Christ the world has now been reconciled to God. In love that can only be measured in terms of Calvary both Father and Son choose to have their throne and city on the earth to dwell with those that were redeemed at such tremendous cost!

The Watchtower Society teaches that Jesus Christ was raised as an invisible spirit being or creature, and will return in this manner. By contrast the Bible teaches the bodily resurrection of Jesus Christ and that He will visibly return in a glorious body which every eye will see.

15. Christ's Bodily Resurrection

CHRIST'S BODILY RESURRECTION

1. Christ's Prophecy. John 2:19-22 (NW) "Break down this temple, and in three days I will raise it up. But he was talking about the temple of his body."

2. Christ's Testimony that He had not been raised a Spirit. Luke 24:37-43 (NW) "They were terrified imagining they beheld a spirit So he said to them: See my hands and my feet, that it is I myself, feel me and see, because a spirit does not have flesh and bones just as YOU beheld that I have." Jesus emphasized that he had been bodily resurrected by saying "it is I myself". He had not assumed another body!

3. Thomas's Testimony a Week Later. John 20:25-29(NW) Thomas believed in Christ's resurrection only after Jesus said to him (verse 27) "Put your finger here, and see my hands and take your hand and stick it into my side, and stop being unbelieving but become believing." If Jesus had not been bodily resurrected but was a spirit, then His prophecy of John 2:19-22 had failed, and He would be a false prophet. Furthermore, if He really was a spirit when he told His disciples He was not a spirit then He was a liar.

The teaching of the Watchtower Society that Christ was raised a spirit would make Christ guilty of both these accusations!

CHRIST RESURRECTED BY THE SPIRIT

Romans 8:1 (NW) "...the spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead..."

1 Peter 3:18. The Emphatic Diaglott and the KJV render this text that Jesus was resurrected "by the Spirit", which is consistent with the above.

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

CHRIST'S BODILY RETURN IS VISIBLE

Philippians 3:20-21(NW) "the heavens, from which place also we are eagerly waiting for a savior, the Lord Jesus Christ, who will refashion our humiliated body to be conformed to his glorious body..."

1 John 3:2 (NW) "We do know that whenever he is made manifest we shall be like him, because we shall see him just as he is."

Hebrews 9:28 (NW) "and the second time that he (Christ) appears..."

Revelation 1:7 (NW) "Look! He is coming with the clouds, and every eye will see him."

Matthew 26:64 (NW) "You will see the Son of man sitting at the right hand of power and coming on the clouds of heaven."

Matthew 24:30(NW)"and then all the tribes of the earth ... will see the Son of Man coming on the clouds of heaven with power and great glory."

N.B. The last two passages refer to evil men who have no eye of spiritual understanding or discernment.

Acts 1:11 (NW) "This Jesus will come thus in the same manner as YOU have beheld him going into the sky." The same Jesus whose body they had felt and touched after His resurrection is the one who is now our Mediator in heaven, (the "Man Christ Jesus" 1 Timothy 2:5). This is the Jesus who will be seen coming from heaven as he was seen going bodily into heaven.

16. Man's Condition In Death

The Watchtower Society teaches that man does not go at death immediately to heaven or hell, as is believed by most of the churches in Christendom, but rather that death is an unconscious sleep. Adventists agree with their Witness friends on this point, but also believe that no one has immortality until they are resurrected at the last day and translated with the living then.

SCRIPTURAL TEACHING

The Bible teaches that death is a sleep: Psalms 6:5; 30:9; 89:10; 115:17; 146:5; Ecclesiastes 9:5, 6; Isaiah 38:18, 19; John 11:11-14, 1 Corinthians 15:17,18,51-54; 1 Thessalonians 4:13,16 etc

RESURRECTION THE HOPE OF THE CHRISTIAN

Not Death! The Resurrection is called the hope of the Christian. This wonderful event takes place at the last day; John 6:40 (NW) "For this is the will of my Father, that everyone that beholds the Son and exercises faith in Him should have everlasting life, and I will resurrect him at the last day."

(See Also John 6:39, 44, 54; 11:24 for the resurrection at the last day.)

THIS IS WHEN CHRIST RETURNS

1 Thessalonians 4:15-18, 1 Corinthians 15:51-54. (See previous chapters.)

WHY THE DEAD ARE NOT IN HEAVEN OR HELL

1. There would be no reason to have a resurrection.
2. Christ would not need to return to receive the saved to Himself. John 14:1-3.
3. At death the dead would have had to be judged in order to direct them to either heaven or hell. However, the judgment is future.
4. The dead are rewarded when Christ returns, and not at death, Revelation 22:12.

IMMORTALITY OF THE SOUL

The Watchtower Society is very forthright in denouncing Christendom for teaching the

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

immortality of the soul. They believe this teaching is a hall-mark of all false religion, because it is neither scriptural or logical!

BUT THE WATCHTOWER SOCIETY TEACHES IT!

It comes as a shock to Witnesses when they realize that looking at their own organization it is guilty of the same teaching! For this is what the Society has always taught concerning the 144,000/class, that these people since 1878 (later 1918) have gone to heaven as immortal spirits!

This teaching is no different than that of the churches of Christendom, which they have so strongly condemned. The only difference is that it did not happen for 19 centuries! However the Bible teaches that are all still asleep until the last day. Then they come up in the First Resurrection otherwise they will sleep on as the rest of the wicked dead until the end of the thousand years. Revelation 20:5.

BIBLE TRUTH

The Bible teaches clearly that after man sinned, Jesus Christ came to seek and save that which was lost. Perfect humanity on earth is to be restored to perfect humanity in Paradise on earth. This is the plan of salvation in Jesus Christ. Mankind was created to be perfect men - never to be spirits or spirit creatures, either in life or death.

17. The Trinity

The Trinity doctrine is one which has caused more controversy in the Christian church down through the ages, than possibly any other teaching in the Bible. Most Christians are only superficial Bible students, and have never fully studied the subject For this reason, they are usually unable to give answers to their Jehovah's Witness friends who oppose it so vehemently. It is usually one of the main reasons why our Witness friends have become Jehovah Witnesses, and it is usually the last Bible truth that they accept when they leave the organization. It is then very essential that every Christian makes a thorough study of what the Bible teaches concerning the Godhead, and then learn how to present this teaching in an attractive, logical, and above all, scriptural way. This chapter is an introduction to the following chapters, to help you do just that!

"THE TRINITY"

The word "Trinity" does not appear in the Bible. It is like "Millennium"(a term used to describe the Thousand Years of Revelation 20) or "Tetragrammaton"(used for the four Hebrew letters of the Divine Name throughout the Old Testament). What then is the real meaning of the word "Trinity"? It strictly means:

TRINITY = TRI-IN-UNITY, (THREE working in UNITY) On this understanding, one can say without hesitation that they believe in the Trinity, three separate Divine Persons working together in Unity, because this is exactly what the Bible teaches!

However, to our Jehovah's Witness friends, the word "Trinity" means not three persons working together in unity, but one person with three heads as shown in the illustration featured on the front of the "Watchtower" magazine (See chapter 19).

GODHEAD

Many persons prefer to use the word Godhead, instead of Trinity since a number of translations of the Bible use in Colossians 2:9, Acts 17:29 and Romans 1:20. However, the translators of the New World translation did not use the word so it is not helpful in working with Witnesses who will not use any translation other than that of the Watchtower Society.

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

ONE TRUE GOD OR TWO?

The Bible teaches that there is only One True God. Every Jehovah's Witness will agree with you on this point. (They understand that He is only one person, Jehovah God the Father.) The Bible states:

Isaiah 45:5, 6, 14, (NW) "I am Jehovah and there is no one else, With the exception of me there is no God. There is none besides me. I am Jehovah, and there is no one else there is no [other] God." The Bible is emphatic that there is only one God! K this was all the Bible said on this subject things would be simple, but the Bible clearly shows that Jesus is also a fully Divine Person. How now do we deal with this problem?

ONE GOD OR TWO?

In the following chapters will be clearly shown that the Bible teaches that Jesus is also God, but one text of special interest to Witnesses is:

Isaiah 9:6 (NW) "For there has been a child born to us, Mighty God, Eternal Father, Prince of Peace." Whilst other texts state that Jesus is God, this text calls Him here, Mighty God. The Father they say is called the Almighty God. This explanation sounds fine at first, but quickly one realizes, that now the Watchtower Society has not the Biblical ONE True God, but TWO Gods - an Almighty God and a Mighty God. If there is no God besides Him, then this second inferior God must be false. What is the truth on this subject?

A TRIUNE GOD

In the following chapters it will be presented that besides the person of the Father being God or fully Divine, so also are the persons of Jesus Christ and the Holy Spirit. These three persons are the eternal Godhead or Heavenly Government, working in such close harmony, unity and love, that they are as one.

The first verse in the Bible says: Genesis 1:1, "In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth." Is it Biblical to say a triune God is introduced to us in the first verse of the Bible? Yes, definitely! Firstly the Hebrew word for God here, is Elohim which is plural. Secondly, the Bible tells us that Jesus Christ was involved in creation, "All things came into existence through him" John 1:3, (see also, Colossians 1:15-18 and Hebrews 1:2). Thirdly, the Holy Spirit, (called God's active force in the New World translation) was also present at creation, moving to and fro over the surface of the waters, Genesis 1:2

When it came to the creation of man the Bible states: Genesis 1:26, 27, (NW) "And God went on to say: 'Let us make man in our image, according to our likeness. And God proceeded to create the man in his image...' Note: In the above passage God is presented as being more than one person, "Us", "Our", and then it presents God in the singular, "his". How can this be?

THE BIBLICAL IDIOM OF PERFECT UNITY

What has confused many people, especially our Jehovah's Witness friends, is the Biblical idiom of perfect unity. God always looks on perfect unity either in man or in God as being one:

Genesis 2:24, (NW) "That is why a man will leave his father and his mother and he must stick to his wife and they must become one flesh". We could comprehend this statement if it said "one in spirit" but not "one flesh"! What do we do about this idiom? We do not try to explain it, - we just accept it. Likewise with the Godhead.

Isaiah 44:6, "Thus said the LORD the King of Israel, and his redeemer the LORD of hosts; I am the first, and I am the last; and besides me there is no God."

Here the Bible presents two persons, with the name LORD or Jehovah, (in the following chapters it will be shown that there are two Jehovah's). However, these two speak as one person, saying "I" and "me"! This is God's way of presenting to us the unique unity of the persons in the Godhead. He desired the same unity for the original perfect couple he created as "one flesh". Thus these two persons of the Godhead in Isaiah 44:6 working in such close unity, speak as one and say "I" and "Me". The "his redeemer" of

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

Isaiah 44:6 is obviously Jesus in His pre-existence. In Revelation 1:11, 17 and 22:13, Jesus claims to be 'the first and the last'. (Many sincere Witnesses have been led to accept the Biblical teaching of the triune God after wrestling with the above references to both Jehovah and Jesus as 'the first and the last'.)

SUMMARY

When all the Bible texts are examined concerning the Godhead, the evidence is overwhelming that God is triune. The following chapters will confirm the above in greater detail and also deal with some of the problems sincerely raised by our Jehovah's Witness friends. This subject is their greatest stumbling block in accepting Bible truth. They will need a lot of prayer and patience as you work to help them.

May God bless you!

18. The Divine Names

The Watchtower Society teaches that God's name is Jehovah or Yahweh. Is this His name, or is it just one of His names?

DOES GOD HAVE MORE THAN ONE NAME?

Two texts are sufficient to answer that question:

Exodus 3:13, 14, (RSV). Then Moses said to God, "If I come to the people of Israel and say to them, 'The God of your fathers has sent me to you,' and they ask me, 'What is his name?' what shall I say to them?" God said to Moses "I AM WHO I AM". And he said. "Say this to the people of Israel, I AM has sent me to you."

Exodus 6:2, 3, (NW). And God went on to speak to Moses and to say to him: "I am Jehovah. And I used to appear to Abraham, Isaac and Jacob as God Almighty, but as respects my name Jehovah, I did not make myself known to them."

The two above texts introduce us to three of God's names. In the Kingdom Interlinear's Foreword, page 15, mention is made of the ten names of God. "And in his 25th letter to Marcena, written at Rome, AD 384 he treats of the ten names of God and says: The ninth [name of God] is a tetragrammaton." The name of God that this early writer listed as ninth of the ten, was the tetragrammaton, YHWH, (Jehovah).

SOME NAMES OF GOD

Before examining some of the names of God one needs to keep in mind:

A study of the word "name" in the Old Testament reveals how much this word means in Hebrew. The name is no mere label, but is significant of the real personality of him to whom it belongs. Aid to Bible Understanding, page 885. It will now be interesting to note how the various names of God were used to reveal His character and attributes:

SHADDAI.

Translated Almighty is from a verb implying "to display power." It is often used with EL (god) in a compound form of EL-SHADDAI, God Almighty. It first appears in Genesis 17:1, a literal rendering would be, "YAHWEY appeared to Abram and said I am EL-SHADDAI" Of the two names of God found in this verse, it appears EL-SHADDAI was known earlier and more fully to the Patriarchs according to Exodus 6:3, "And I appeared unto Abraham, unto Isaac, and unto Jacob, by the name EL-SHADDAI but by my name YHWH was I not known to them.

YHWH

Translated Yahweh, Jehovah, Yehowah etc. It is usually written in the King James Version as LORD with large capital. "The name Jehovah is believed to come from the same verb (yah as does ehyah) and some Hebrew authorities suggest that the name literally means He Causes to Become (or Occur, or Come to Be). Aid to Bible Understanding, page 888. This name would then reveal Jehovah as the Creator and the One who invariably causes His purpose to come to realization. However 'Eh-yeh' a form of the verb 'to be' also implies 'self existing One.

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

EH-YEH ASHER EH-YEH

This is usually translated I AM THAT I AM in Hebrew as in English, this name is a form of the verb 'to be' and implies that its possessor is the eternal, self-existing One. In Exodus 3:13, "And Moses said unto God, Behold, when I come unto the children of Israel, and shall say unto them, 'The God of your fathers hath sent me unto you;'" and they shall say to me, 'What is his name?' What shall I say unto them? In verse 14, God's reply in Hebrew was "Eh-yeh asher eh-yeh".

ADONAI

This translated 'Lord' and written in the KJV as Lord. The Hebrew word 'adon' is usually translated 'lord' or 'master' and is used of a proprietor of property, the master of a household, a governor of a province. But when it is applied to God, the word takes the form Adonai. It sets forth God's lordship, ownership and right to obedience. Thus it is often used by men addressing God, such as Abraham and Moses etc. Young's Analytical Concordance lists it first appearing in Genesis 15:2,8; Genesis 18:3,27,30,31,32; Genesis 20:4; Exodus 4:10,13.

It is interesting to note that God's servants addressed Him as ADONAI even when in the same chapter He is identified as YHWH. For instance in Genesis 18, God is identified ten times as YHWH, but the five times Abraham addresses Him, he calls Him, ADONAI. However the New World Bible does not allow this fact, for in Genesis 18:3 it reads, "Then he said., 'Jehovah, if now, I have found favor in your eyes, please do not pass by your servant.'" However, it should read, "Then he said: 'Adonai, if now, I have found favor in your eyes, please do not pass by your servant.'"

Similarly the conversation Moses had with God in Exodus 4:10-13, The KW renders verse 10 consistently as "And Moses said unto the LORD, O my Lord, I am not eloquent." Where as the NW has it: "Moses now said to Jehovah: 'Excuse me, Jehovah, but I am not a fluent speaker.'" Why has the NW not translated it, "Moses now said to Jehovah, Excuse me, Adonai, but I am not a fluent speaker"? Would this fact have destroyed the Watchtower's teaching concerning God having just ONE Divine Name?

Would it have shown that Christians who address God as Lord are following the example given in the Bible by Abraham and Moses? Down through the ages servants have not addressed their superiors by their names, nor children their parents. Could this be the reason why Jesus, who knew the names of God, and especially which was the most frequently recorded name of God, did not suggest Christians using any of the special names of God, but rather taught them to pray addressing God as "our Father" ?

The emphasis the Watchtower Society places on Jehovah as the only Divine Name to be used, is not supported by either the teaching of the Bible or the example of Jesus!

YAHWEH or JEHOVAH?

The exact pronunciation of the name is not known today, but the most popular way of rendering it is Jehovah. The Kingdom Interlinear Translation, page 11. Concerning the way the word Jehovah was constructed the Aid book on page 884 says: "By combining the vowel signs of 'Adho-nay' and 'Elohim' with the four consonants of the Tetragrammaton the pronunciations Yehowah and Yehowih were formed. The first of these provide the basis for the Latinized form Jehovah."

This paragraph continues: "The first recorded use of this form dates from the thirteenth century C.E. Raymundus Martini, a Spanish Monk, of the Dominican Order used it in his book Pugeo Fidei of the year 1270."

In the Foreword of The Kingdom Interlinear Translation on page 23, the Watchtower Society admits that the more correct pronunciation is Yahweh. It then makes this astonishing admission as to why they still retain Jehovah:

"While inclining to view the pronunciation 'Yahweh' as the more correct way, we have retained the form 'Jehovah' because of people's familiarity with it since the 14th century."

The above statement seems unbelievable coming from an organization that prides itself on advancing with further light and is totally opposed to retaining anything because it has been popular or traditional since the Dark Ages!

Could the real reason for retaining Jehovah be because to adopt Yahweh would be to now call themselves in English speaking countries, Yahweh's Witnesses, which does not sound as acceptable as Jehovah's Witnesses?

This all adds up to the fact that the exact pronunciation of God's name is not even considered

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

important minds of those in leadership at the headquarters of the Watchtower Society. Add to this fact that Jehovah while the most popular of the names of God, was not the only one, and Jesus made no effort to include any name in the Lord's prayer, the Watchtower Society has little case for its emphasis on the name of Jehovah.

TO CALL UPON HIS NAME

In the Bible the expression, call upon God's name meant that one wanted to be associated with God and prepared to obey and serve Him: Isaiah 64:7, (NW) "And there is no one calling upon your name, no one rousing himself to lay hold on you."

Zephaniah 3:9, (NW) "In order for them all to call upon the name of Jehovah, in order to serve him." Those who call upon the name of the Lord are those who lay hold on Him and obey Him.

CALLED BY HIS NAME

The expression in the Bible called by His name does not mean that a person, people, building or city takes the name of God as their own name, but rather that they live or function according to God's will: Isaiah 43:03, 7 (NW) "Bring my sons from afar off, and my daughters from the extremity of the earth, everyone that is called by my name and that I have created for my own glory, that I have formed, yes, that I have made."

These sons and daughters referred to here were not those who merely had the name of God woven into theirs, as many Hebrew words did, - but they included all those God had created who were living lives that reflected His glory.

Jeremiah 14:9, (NW) "Jehovah, and upon us it is that your own name has been called." These people, the Jews, were called by Jehovah's own name! However, there is no record where they ever took that name literally, that is Children of Jehovah, or Jehovah's Witnesses etc. It meant that they were in harmony with all He stood for, and were happy to obey and serve Him.

Daniel 9:19, (NW) "O Jehovah, O my God, for your own name has been called upon your city and upon your people." (RSV) "thy city and thy people are called by thy name."

Like the Jews, the city of Jerusalem was not called by the literal name of God either. The Aid book, page 908, speaking of the name of Jerusalem says: "But the Hebrew form, which logically ought to govern, apparently means Possession [or foundation] of twofold peace.

Jeremiah 34:15, (NW) "In the house upon which my name has been called. (RSV) "In the house which is called by my name.

Solomon's Temple was also said to be called by my name, yet it did not have a name which literally used the name of God.

The conclusion is obvious that people, cities or temples which are said to be called by God's name are those which are in harmony with Him, serving and obeying Him.

A PEOPLE FOR HIS NAME

In the early Christian church they were told that God was taking out a people for his name: Acts 15:14, 17 (NW) Symeon has related thoroughly how God for the first time turned his attention to the nations to take out of them a people for his name, people who are called by my name, says Jehovah, who is doing these things".

Just as God's previous people, the Jews, the city of Jerusalem, and Solomon's Temple were all called by God's name, not because they took on the name Jehovah but because they loved and served Him, so the early Christian church would also be called by His name. Verse 17, shows the test was obedience by qualifying them: who is doing these things.

The Bible records Christians being called: Christians, brethren, the church of God/Christ etc ... but never Jehovah!

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

THE NAME OF JESUS CHRIST

When one studies the subject of the Divine Name, they would find it a helpful exercise to mark every text in the Greek Scriptures (New Testament) that deals with the name of the Father, and the name of Jesus Christ. This would quickly put into perspective the truth of this subject as taught by Christ and the apostles. Note some of the following texts, quoted from the New World Bible which mention the name of Jesus Christ:

Acts 4:12, "There is not another name by which we must get saved."
John 20:30, "That YOU may believe that Jesus is the Christ. YOU may have life by means of his name."
1 John 5: 13, "YOU have life everlasting, YOU who put YOUR faith in the name of the Son of God."
Matthew 24:9, "YOU will be objects of hatred on account of my name..."
Luke 10:17, "The demons are made subject to us by the use of your name."
Colossians 3:17, "Do everything in the name of the Lord Jesus..."
Acts 8:12, "Philip, who was declaring the name of Jesus Christ..."
Acts 9:15, (Paul) "A chosen vessel to me to bear my name to the nations."
Acts 6:28, 40, 41, "ordered not to keep teaching this name,"
"flogged them and ordered them to stop speaking Jesus' name."
"rejoicing to be dishonored in behalf of his name."

THE NAME OF JESUS CHRIST v JEHOVAH

Unless one understands who Jesus Christ is, and who Jehovah is and the relationship of these two names in the Godhead, it would seem as if there is competition or tension between these two names. This is how the Watchtower Society views the situation. When in Phil.2:9, the Bible says that Jesus was given a name above every name, the Society in their New World translation of the Bible added the word other, so the name of Jesus would not be above the name of Jehovah! Note in the Kingdom Interlinear translation how other was not in the original Greek, and has been added:

The above type of tampering with the Bible on the subject of God has been done repeatedly in the New World translation, despite the warnings of Revelation 22:18,19 about those who add or take from the Bible! In the next few chapters as the subject of God is dealt more fully with, further such examples will be seen. Since most sincere and loyal Jehovah's Witnesses, do not use other translations, it is very difficult for them to come to a knowledge of the Truth concerning God, the Persons of the Godhead, and the Divine Names.

CONCLUSION:

There are a number of Divine Names in the Bible. In the Hebrew Scriptures, the one most often used was YHWH, a tetragrammaton, the pronunciation of which is unknown, but thought to be more correctly Yahweh.

In the Greek Scriptures, preaching was mainly in the name of Jesus Christ. It was taught as the only name by which one could be saved. By this name the early Christians lived and died. The names of Jehovah and Jesus Christ are not in competition, but rather a unity, as the next few chapters on the subject of God will prove.

19. The Only True God

The Bible teaches that there is only ONE TRUE GOD. All Christians, including Jehovah's Witnesses agree with this statement. It is at this point of mutual agreement that all discussion on God must begin, and it must then proceed strictly on all that the Bible teaches, on this subject. Our friends, the Jehovah's Witnesses will not only appreciate but welcome this arrangement

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

THE BIBLE ONLY

Since this subject has been such a controversial one down through the ages, it must be dealt with strictly from the Bible if one is going to arrive at truth concerning it. Our Witness friends will agree with us on this point, so it is good to also agree to dispense with all man-made creeds and definitions about God. This means even the word Trinity is also not used since it does not appear in the Bible. (To get this expression out of the way at the very outset of one's discussion is very essential, because the concept of the Trinity given the Witnesses by the Watchtower is a very different one from what is understood by most Christians. An example of their concept of the Trinity is given in the illustration opposite.)

Because of this concept the Witnesses have of the Trinity, it is essential that one is careful in answering their question: "Do you believe in the Trinity?" The best answer to give at the outset of any discussion is that one does not believe in a three-headed gargoyle-type representation of God. What one believes is only what the Bible teaches, and as such any discussion must be exclusively from that inspired record! Now return to the Bible teaching of:

ONE TRUE GOD

Our Witness friends will appreciate it if we use their New World Translation of the Bible: Isaiah 45:5, "I am Jehovah and there is no one else. With the exception of me there is no God. Verse 6, "There is none besides me, I am Jehovah, and there is no one else. Verse 14, "There is no [other] God. There are many texts stating this fact:

There is only One true God and none others!

ONLY ONE CREATOR

Isaiah 44:24, "I Jehovah, am doing everything, stretching out the heavens by myself, laying out the earth."

Isaiah 45:18. "For this is what Jehovah has said, the Creator of the heavens, He the [true] God, the Former of the earth and the Maker of it, He the One who firmly established it, who did not create it simply for nothing, who formed it even to be inhabited. I am Jehovah, and there is no one else". The Bible fact clearly emerges from these and other texts:

The Creator was the ONE TRUE GOD and no one else!

ONLY ONE SAVIOUR

Isaiah 43:11, "I am Jehovah, and besides me there is no savior."

Isaiah 45:21, "Is it not I, Jehovah, besides whom there is no other God; a righteous God and a Savior, there being none excepting me? The Bible now shows clearly that:

This one true God is the ONLY SAVIOUR!

THE TRUE GOD DOES NOT SHARE HIS GLORY

Isaiah 42:13, "I am Jehovah. That is my name; and to no one else shall I give my own glory."

Isaiah 48:11, "And to no one else shall I give my own glory."

Another Bible fact to add to the list

He does not share His GLORY with anyone else!

HE IS THE FIRST AND THE LAST

Isaiah 44:6 "I am the first and I am the last, and besides me there is no God."

This fact is also very clear:

The one true God is THE FIRST AND THE LAST!

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

HE IS THE ONLY ROCK

Isaiah 44:8, "Does there exist a God besides me? No, there is no Rock, I have recognized none."
The true God is often spoken of as the Rock, (See Deuteronomy 32:4, 15, 18, 30, Psalms 92:15 etc.) So this is another fact:

The one true God is a ROCK, the only ROCK!

SUMMARY:

The ONE TRUE GOD is:

1. The ONLY true God.
2. The only CREATOR.
3. The only SAVIOUR.
4. Exclusive in His GLORY.
5. The only FIRST AND LAST.
6. The only ROCK recognized as God.

Our Jehovah's Witness friends will agree that the above God is the person of Jehovah God the Father exclusively. Take the next step of this study from the Bible with care!

20. The Deity Of Christ

All Christians agree that God the Father is a Divine Person and is fully God. However, Who is Jesus Christ? Was He merely a man? An angel? An Archangel? Or is He more than that? Taking the Bible and the Bible only as our guide we find that:

PREPARATION FOR THIS STUDY

1. Pray very earnestly that the Holy Spirit will be present to enlighten your Witness friend, because this subject is the most vital one that you can ever take with them. Unless they will yield to the working of the Holy Spirit, it will be impossible for them to see this essential truth!

1 Corinthians 12:4, (RSV) "No one can say "Jesus is Lord" except by the Holy Spirit."

(This word Lord comes from the same Greek word which the Watchtower Society usually translates Jehovah. This text actually sums up the goal and challenge of this study.)

2. Review the last chapter. Write down the summary on a blackboard or piece of paper.

3. Listen to your Witness friend. It may be necessary to let them talk themselves out, as some become very agitated on this subject. Do not allow yourself to become side-tracked, tell them that any questions they want to ask, you will answer, in time, as you proceed with the study, in finding out ALL that the Bible has to say about the subject of God.

1. THE MIGHTY GOD

Isaiah 9:6, "For there has been a child born to us, there has been a son given to us; and the princely rule will come to be upon his shoulder. And his name will be called Wonderful Counselor, Mighty God, Eternal Father, Prince of Peace."

(The next chapter, verse 21, identifies Mighty God with Jehovah, in the context of that chapter. Your Witness friend will quickly tell you that it is Mighty not Almighty, but don't over labor the point at this stage, nor the fact of Jesus being called Eternal Father. Let the rest of the evidence completely overwhelm them first!)

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

2. JESUS WAS THE CREATOR

John 1:3, "All things came into existence through him, and apart from him not even one thing came into existence."

See also Colossians 1:16-17, (Check with the K.I.T and you will note that the word other has been added and is not in the original Greek!)

3. JESUS IS OUR SAVIOUR

2 Timothy 1:10, "Through the manifestation of our Savior, Christ Jesus." There are many texts identifying Jesus as the Savior.

4. JESUS SHARED THE FATHER'S GLORY

John 17:15, "So now you, Father, glorify me alongside yourself with the glory that I had alongside you before the world was."

5. JESUS IS THE FIRST AND THE LAST

Revelation 1:17-18, "I am the First and the Last, and the living one; and I became dead." Revelation 22:13, "I am the Alpha and the Omega, the first and the last, the beginning and the end. (If your Witness friend is not becoming too overwhelmed, you could link this next text into this study, otherwise leave it until later and return to it.)

Revelation 1:8, "I am the Alpha and the Omega" says Jehovah God, "the One who is and who was and who is coming, the Almighty." (Note that in the previous verse Jesus was identified as the one who "is coming")

6. JESUS WAS THE ROCK

1 Corinthians 10:1-4, "Now I do not want YOU to be ignorant, brothers, that our forefathers all got baptized into Moses, the spiritual rock-mass that followed them, and that rock-mass meant the Christ."

(Although Paul did not want people to be ignorant of this great truth, the Watchtower Society certainly does the way they have mutilated the translation of this passage. The K.I.T will offer some help although it translates Rock as rock-mass, it shows the original Greek was 'was' and not meant. It should read and identify: the Rock was Christ.)

1 Corinthians 10:1-4, (RSV) "I want you to know, brethren, the supernatural Rock which followed them, and the Rock was Christ."

When Jesus asked his disciples in Matthew 16, who they thought He was? Peter made his confession that he believed Jesus was the Christ (Messiah). Jesus then took his disciples a step further in identifying Him by saying of Himself, "Upon this Rock."

PROBLEMS AND QUESTIONS

By now our Witness friend should be agitated about this study, as he begins to see that when one starts studying all the Bible says about God, the subject is not as simple as he has been led to believe by the Watchtower Society. He will be mentally fighting every step of the study, and by now some could be in a mild state of panic. You could get these questions hurled at you:

Do you believe that Christ is Jehovah?
Do you believe that Christ is God?
Do you believe that Christ and the Father are one person?
So you believe in that Trinity!

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

Try not to get side-tracked, and certainly don't try to answer these questions at this stage, let the Witness see the Watchtower has never touched on large sections of the Bible dealing with this subject. Let them see the problems. It is only when they have been convinced of them that they will find the answers and truth do not lie with the Watchtower Society teachings. To reinforce these problems, now revise:

1. ONE TRUE GOD OR TWO?

This is the first problem. The Watchtower Society says there is an Almighty God, which is Jehovah God the Father, and a Mighty God, Jesus Christ the Son. But this now gives us two Gods, the Bible is emphatic there is only one true God! That there is no God besides Him, and no other God created before or after Him, Isaiah 43:10, 11. However, in the New Testament the Bible teaches that Christ was God: Matthew 1:23, "Will give birth to a son, and they will call his name Immanuel, which means, when translated, With Us Is God."

When Jesus was born it meant that God was now with men. Jesus was acknowledged as God: John 20:28, in answer Thomas said to him: "My Lord and my God!" Jesus complimented Thomas on understanding and belief, in making this confession. (The word Lord in the Greek is the same word, the Watchtower Society usually translates as Jehovah but chose not to this time, although it would have been consistent with the word God). Now ask your Witness friend, about this problem. What are his answers? Does he believe in ONE God or TWO?

2. ONE CREATOR OR TWO?

In Isaiah we already discovered that the Bible was very emphatic that everything was created by Jehovah and by no one else. Now in the New Testament we are told very clearly that everything was created by Jesus Christ. How do we reconcile these Bible facts? Has any doctrine of the Watchtower Society got the answer? TO say that Jehovah God the Father was the only creator, and used Jesus Christ creates problem with the Bible statements that Jehovah said He created by myself and there was no one else. So we return to the problem, - ONE Creator or TWO?

3. ONE SAVIOUR OR TWO?

Once again we have the Bible stating that Jehovah is the only Savior and there was none besides Him. Yet in the New Testament, Jesus Christ is the Savior.

4. DID JEHOVAH SHARE HIS GLORY?

From the statements in Isaiah Jehovah states that He gives His glory to no one else. However, when Jesus prayed to His Father, in John 17:5, He states that He had shared that glory, before the world was! How is this problem reconciled?

5. CAN TWO BE THE FIRST AND THE LAST?

Jesus claimed in Revelation 1:17-18, and 22:13, to be the First and the Last in Isaiah 44:6, Jehovah claims to be the First and the Last! As one examines this last text is there two Jehovah's, Jehovah the King of Israel and his redeemer Jehovah of Hosts? Are these two Jehovah's presented as ONE God or TWO?

6. IS THERE ONE ROCK OR TWO?

In Isaiah God says there is no Rock besides Him. But the apostle Paul says that the Rock Who went with Israel was Christ. In Matthew 16 Jesus claimed that He was the Rock on which the church would be built. Is the Bible outlining ONE Rock or TWO? If Christ was the Rock Who went with Israel, was He

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

then Jehovah? If so are there two Jehovah's?

ARE THERE TWO JEHOVAHS?

From the above study your Witness friend will have asked or at least wondered, "Are there two persons called in the Bible?" They should now be ready for the next step in this study, that there are two separate persons who are called Jehovah. (And this truth we will continue to show our Witness friend from their Bible - the New World.):

Genesis 19:24, Then Jehovah made it rain sulfur and fire from Jehovah, from the heavens, upon Sodom and upon Gomorrah." The first Jehovah had been on the earth talking with Abraham, and it is He Who rains down the destruction from the second Jehovah in the heavens.

Here is another passage showing two Jehovah's:

Zechariah 2:9-10, "And you people will certainly know that Jehovah of armies himself has sent me. "Cry out loudly and rejoice O daughter of Zion; for here I am coming, and I will reside in the midst of you," is the utterance of Jehovah." The first Jehovah is Jehovah of armies and He is sending "me", Who in the next verse identifies Himself as I am coming and as this second Jehovah.

DID JESUS APPEAR AS JEHOVAH?

Before examining the appearances of Jehovah to man in the Bible, we first need to understand this fact:

God the Father has never been seen by human beings. John 6:46, Not that any man has seen the Father, except he who is from God; this one has seen the Father.

John 5:37, "The Father. YOU have neither heard his voice at any time nor seen his figure." From the above texts we know that if there were any appearances of a person called Jehovah, we know that this person was not that of the Father! Now let us look at this appearance of Jehovah to Abraham: Genesis 18:1, "Afterward Jehovah appeared to him among the big trees of Mamre."

Verse 3, "Then he said: "Jehovah, if, now, I have found favor in your eyes, please do not pass by your servant."

Verse 4, "Let a little water be taken, please, and YOU must have YOUR feet washed. Then recline under the tree."

Verse 13-14, "Then Jehovah said to Abraham: Why was it that Sarah laughed, saying, 'Shall I really and truly give birth although I have become old?' Is anything too extraordinary for Jehovah?"

Verse 22, "At this point the men turned from there and got on their way to Sodom; but as for Jehovah, he was still standing before Abraham.

Verse 32, "Finally he said: May Jehovah, please, not grow hot with anger, but let me speak just this once; Suppose ten are found there. In turn he said: 'I shall not bring it to ruin on account of the ten.'"

Verse 33, "Then Jehovah went his way when he had finished speaking to Abraham, and Abraham returned to his place."

Because there were not ten righteous found in Sodom, this Jehovah went ahead and destroyed it, by calling fire and destruction down from the Jehovah in the Heavens. Genesis.19:24. Was this Jehovah with Abraham, Jesus?

WAS THIS JEHOVAH JESUS CHRIST?

Yes! Jesus when He was on earth, claimed to be the One who had appeared to Abraham and caused him to rejoice John 8:56-58 "Abraham YOUR father rejoiced greatly in the prospect of seeing my day, and he saw it and rejoiced. Therefore the Jews said to him. You are not yet fifty years old, and still you have seen Abraham? Jesus said to them: Most truly I say to YOU, Before Abraham came into existence, I have been." (I have been should have been translated I am see this text below from the Kingdom Interlinear Translation). (N. W. translation)

In the above passage Jesus was not only claiming to be the One who appeared to Abraham, but He was also claiming to be the I AM, the name God gave to Moses, when Moses asked God His name, Exodus 3:13-14. (It will be necessary to check this passage in a number of translations, as the New World

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

translation has endeavored to obscure this great Bible truth.) The Jews had no question as to what Jesus was claiming: To claim to be God was blasphemy, and its penalty was stoning, so the next verse says:

John 8:59, Therefore they picked up stones to hurl [them] at him; but Jesus hid and went out of the temple. So Jesus nearly stoned for having claimed to be the I am, which the Jews knew was a claim to be God and the One Who appeared to Abraham and Moses as Jehovah.

DOES IT MATTER IF JESUS IS GOD OR THE I AM?

Yes! Jesus warned the Jews that if they did not believe that He was the I am they would die in their sins. Look at this text in the original Greek as it appears in the Kingdom Interlinear Translation. Notice the word he has been added in the New World Bible: (John 8:24)

This above text shows how serious it is if a person does not believe Jesus is the I am. In the next verse He was asked "Who are you?" In verse 53, Jesus was again asked "Who do you claim to be?" When He clearly showed them He was the One who spoke to Abraham and made him rejoice, and that He was the I am, they became angry and tried to of stone Him. These Jewish people were very sincere and loyal to their organization and beliefs. To them Jehovah had said, "You are my witnesses" Isaiah 43:10. Could it be that today those who claim to be Jehovah's modern witnesses are making the same tragic mistake? If they refuse to believe that He is the I am like the Jews of old who rejected His Deity, they will perish in their sins!

FURTHER PROOFS OF THE DEITY OF JESUS

(Check the following texts in a number of different translations. When using the New World Bible on this subject it is necessary to check every text with the Kingdom Interlinear Translation and the original Greek text, for at best the N.W. is a biased translation. Many Greek students would describe it however as being plain dishonest, as it adds, alters and deletes words in the original Greek text, which clearly show the Deity of Jesus Christ!)

1. Jesus is Called God. Isaiah 9:6, John 1:1, 20:28, Romans 9: 5, Titus 2:13, Hebrews 1: 8 etc. Note John 1:1:

Note how in the K.I.T. theos is translated and god. In the N.W. it has been added to make it a god. Check now with John 3:16 and you will see that theos is translated God! The literal translation from the Greek should have therefore consistently been and God was the Word, and therefore have been rendered and the Word was God.

2. Jesus is part of the Godhead. "In him dwells all the fullness of the Godhead bodily." Colossians 2:9.

3. Jesus is Eternal. In Isaiah 9:6 (N.W.) Jesus is called: "Wonderful Counselor, Mighty God, Eternal Father."

4. Jesus is King of Kings and Lord of Lords. Revelation 17:14: "These will battle with the Lamb, but, because he is Lord of lords, and King of kings, the Lamb will conquer them." In 1 Timothy 6:15, Paul applies these titles to God.

5. Jesus made claims only made by Deity. The prophets all spoke with Thus said the Lord but Jesus said, I say unto you! (See Matthew 5: 28, 32, 34, 39, 44)

6. Jesus is Omnipresent. He said in Matthew 18:20: "For where there are two or three gathered together in my name, there I am in their midst."

7. Jesus is Omniscient (all knowing). Peter said to Him: Lord, you know all things;" (See: John 21:17.)

8. Jesus is Omnipotent He not only created all things, John 1:3, but the preservation of this creation also depends upon his omnipotence. Colossians 1:16-17, Hebrews 1:1

9. Jesus Is To Be Worshipped. When Jesus was born into this world the Father commanded in Hebrews 1:6 (N.W.): "And let all God's angels worship him." Angels will refuse worship Revelation 19:10, 22:8-9 and only God should I be worshipped. Matthew 4: 10.

10. Jesus Invites Prayers to be addressed to Him. In John 14:14, the original Greek text says, if ever anything you should ask me in the name of me this I shall do." Although the New World translation is claimed to be a very accurate translation, note how it deletes the me in the text, which would show Christ was inviting requests to be made to Him: The following are some examples of prayers addressed to Jesus: "And they went on casting stones at Stephen as he made appeal and said: Lord Jesus, receive my spirit."

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

Acts 7:59. The last prayer in the Bible is addressed to Jesus: "Amen! Come, Lord Jesus." Revelation 22:20.

21. Is God more than one Person?

Humanity, a government or a family are all singular expressions denoting a unity of a number of persons. Could the inspired Bible, also reveal that the word "God" is used in a similar manner for a unity of Divine personalities?

From the last two chapters on the subject of God we have discovered that the Bible teaches:

- a. There is only ONE TRUE GOD.
- b. Jesus as well as the Father is revealed as God.
- c. There are two persons called Jehovah. (A third personality will in a later chapter be shown to be known as the Spirit of Jehovah.)

In view of the above clear Bible teachings, we now ask the question:

CAN GOD BE MORE THAN ONE PERSON?

Once again using the New World Bible we will let it answer this question: Genesis 1:26, And God went on to say: "Let us make man in our Image, according to our likeness." Here the Bible, in its very first chapter, introduces us to the fact that God is more than one person. Since John 1:3, and Colossians 1:15-17, state plainly that everything that was created was made by Jesus Christ, then Jesus was also included in this conversation. This 'us' cannot refer to the Father talking to angels, because angels, even Archangels can not create. Let us make man must be limited to the persons of the Father and the Son, and earlier in Verse 2, we have the Spirit of God present at creation.

It is interesting that the word used here, and the one usually used in the Hebrew for God is Elohim. Words in Hebrew ending in im are plural. Watchtower publications such as United in Worship of the Only True God (1983) pages 17-18 argue that this word Elohim is only used to convey an idea of excellence or majesty, when Elohim is followed by a singular verb. However, in this verse, Elohim is followed by the verb for make which is also plural.

CAN JEHOVAH GOD BE MORE THAN ONE PERSON?

Genesis 3:22, And Jehovah God went on to say: Here the man has become like one of us in knowing good and bad." The above text needs no comment, along with this text: Genesis 11:6, 7, After that Jehovah said Come now! Let us go down and confuse their language."

HOW CAN MORE THAN ONE PERSON BE ONE GOD?

It is strange how that our Witness friends do not have any difficulty in accepting that their Government is made up of a number of persons. Likewise their own family unit is made up of at least themselves and two parents, yet they are one family. However, when it comes to the subject of God the Watchtower Society makes it a real stumbling to them, to even suggest that God or the Godhead, (this expression is found in some translations) consists of more than God the Father!

Throughout this study we have been keeping strictly to what the Bible says, and we can begin to understand how the Divine Persons of the Heavenly Family or Government are One, when we see how God speaks of the unity of a married couple: Genesis 2:24, "That is why a man will leave his father and his mother and he must stick to his wife and they must become one flesh."

One flesh! We could understand it if God said they were to become one in spirit, but not one flesh! The amazing thing is that although man cannot understand this language of God, everyone seems to have accepted it without question. So far even in the pictures of the Dark Ages, I have never seen a representation of Adam and Eve represented with one body and a man and woman's head. Yet when the unity of the Godhead is presented as ONE, instead of accepting it as God's way of describing things", weird three-headed gargoyles-type representations are made of God! Reacting against this type of "Trinity",

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

the Watchtower Society and some other Unitarian groups, reject the central truth of the scripture concerning the Deity of Christ, that in essence Jesus, like the Father is God!

BUT ISN'T THE FATHER GREATER THAN THE SON?

While on earth, Jesus said: John 14:28, "The Father is greater than I am." Jesus did not say the Father was better than He was. While in rank when Jesus was on earth, the Father was greater, in essence they were both equally Divine or God!

This is easily understood with the married couple which God says is one flesh. Both are equally human yet the Bible says that the husband is greater than the wife. While he is greater than her, he is not better than her, for they are both human. Likewise, the Father in rank was greater than the Son, but both are equally Divine or God!

WAS THE FATHER AND JESUS THE SAME PERSON?

No! What is more I have never met a person who believed this! Just because the Bible reveals that Father and Son are both God this does not make them the same person anymore than an earthly father and son are the same person because they are both human. This argument is considered a "straw man- put up by the Watchtower Society, to be knocked down.

Jesus prayed to His Father, and always taught that His Father was another person but that He was the very image of His Father. So the Bible teaches that Jesus and the Father were two separate persons, but they were in essence both God.

NO MAN HATH SEEN GOD AT ANY TIME

In the very text that says no man hath seen God at any time, in the original Greek, Jesus is called the only-begotten god or God. Unfortunately the Watchtower Society chose to translate this word as god to hide this truth about Jesus:

Who was Jesus referring to when He said no man has seen God at any time? The context of the text shows very clearly He was referring to God the Father, not to Himself. John 6:46 also clarifies this statement.

22. Personality of the Holy Spirit

The Watchtower Society teaches that the "Holy Spirit" is not a person but God's active force. It is argued that in the same way that water is not a person, so "holy spirit" is also not a person. On the other hand most Christians believe that the Bible teaches that the Holy Spirit has both personality and Deity. What does the Bible really teach about the Holy Spirit?

THE PERSONALITY OF THE HOLY SPIRIT

To have personality one must have:

EMOTION
INTELLECT
A WILL

Now notice what the Bible teaches concerning the Holy Spirit having these attributes of personality:

The Holy Spirit can:

1. Talk and direct. Acts 8:29, 10:19, 20, 13:2-4.
2. Forbid. Acts 16:6, 7.

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

3. Teach. John 14:26, 16:13.
4. Comfort. John 14:16, 18 Galatians 5:22, 23.
5. Author prophecy. 2 Peter 1:21, 1 Peter 1:11.
6. Give gifts. 1 Corinthians 12:1-11.

The Holy Spirit has:

7. A Will. 1 Corinthians 12:11.
8. A Mind and Thoughts. Romans 8:27.
9. An Intellect. 1 Corinthians 2:11.
10. Love. Romans 15:30.
11. Fellowship. 2 Corinthians 13:14.
12. Feelings. Ephesians 4:30.

The Holy Spirit can be:

13. Tempted. Hebrews 10:29, Acts 5:9.
14. Lied to. Acts 5:3, 4.
15. Vexed. Isaiah 63:10.
16. Despised. Hebrews 10:29.

In view of the above list of personality traits (and the list is far from exhaustive), one wonders how the Watchtower Society can deny the personality of the Holy Spirit. Even in their New World translation this truth is very evident. (Note how that although the Society Would Prefer to refer to the Holy Spirit as just holy spirit, the translators have been forced to put the before the name):

John 14:26, But the helper, the holy spirit, that one will teach YOU all things.

John 16:13, However, when that one arrives, the spirit of the truth, he will guide YOU into all the truth, for he will not speak of his own impulse, but what things he hears, he will speak, and he will declare to YOU the things coming.

Isaiah 63:10, But they themselves rebelled and made his holy spirit feel hurt.

Hebrews 10: 29, and who has outraged the spirit.

When one begins to make a study of what the Bible reveals of the Holy Spirit, it is very obvious that the Holy Spirit is a personality. An active force such as water or electricity can not teach, guide, speak, declare, or feel hurt or outraged! Note also how the New World translation even translates the Spirit as he instead of the impersonal it! Note how this translation also allows the following text: Acts 13:2, As they were publicly ministering to Jehovah and fasting, the holy spirit said. "Of all persons set Barnabas and Saul apart for me for the work to which I have called them."

THE SPIRIT'S NAME IS JEHOVAH

Throughout this study numerous references are found to the Holy Spirit, being called Jehovah or the Spirit of Jehovah. The fact that the Spirit shares the same family name as the Father and Son is evident from Matthew 28:19: (NW) "Go therefore and make disciples of people of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the holy spirit."

Note the word name is singular! Also that three persons are named, because there are three separate distinct persons!

JESUS AND THE HOLY SPIRIT

Jesus regarded the Holy Spirit as being another person such as Himself. He spoke of the Holy Spirit as being another representative. The Kingdom Interlinear translates this word literally as paraclete, which the Concise Oxford Dictionary defines as Advocate. This is the same Greek word used in 1 John 2:1, which speaks of Jesus Christ being an advocate with the Father.

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

THE HOLY SPIRIT IS A SEPARATE PERSON

The Holy Spirit is a separate person from the Father. He pleads or intercedes with the Father on our behalf. Like Christ He stands between us and the Father to plead for us.

In Romans 8:26-27 it is stated twice that the Spirit "pleads for us" (NW), "makes" intercession for us." In Romans 8:34 it goes on to speak of Christ "who also pleads for us" (NW), "Who also makes intercession for us" (KJV). Two persons plead for us. Jesus Christ and the Holy Spirit.

This proves conclusively that the Holy Spirit is not part of the Father or an extension of Him, otherwise the Father would be pleading with Himself! The Holy Spirit is as much a separate personality from the Father as Jesus is.

THE HOLY SPIRIT AS GOD

1. Is God. Acts 5:3,4 (N.W.): "Ananias, why has Satan emboldened you to play false to the holy spirit? You have played false, not to men, but to God."

2. As Creator. Job 33:4: (KJV) "The Spirit of God hath made me, (NW) God's own spirit made me."

3. Is Eternal. Hebrews 9:14. The same word in Greek which is translated eternal or everlasting is used in 1 Timothy 1:17, to describe the only God.

4. Is Jehovah. 2 Corinthians 3:17 (NW) "Now Jehovah is the Spirit." Isaiah 48:16 (NW) "And now the Lord Jehovah is the Spirit."

5. Can Be Blasphemed Against. Matthew 12:31, (NW) "On this account I say to YOU, Every sort of sin and blasphemy will be forgiven men, but the blasphemy against the spirit will not be forgiven."

This last text alone proves the Deity of the Holy Spirit, for one can only blaspheme against a person Who is Divine or God!

SUMMARY:

The evidence is overwhelming that the Holy Spirit is a Person with the attributes of personality. This Person, is Divine and like Jesus Christ is in essence God. Thus the Holy Spirit takes His place with Father and Son, in the Godhead, working for the salvation of mankind. 2 Corinthians 13:14, The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the communion of the Holy Ghost be with you all. Amen.

23. Objections To The Trinity

REASONS FOR THE OBJECTIONS

Many sincere Jehovah's Witnesses have genuine problems in accepting the truth on the Godhead or Trinity, because:

1. Their Concept of the Trinity. They have been conditioned to think of the Trinity as a three-headed gargoyle, as depicted in a previous chapter on the front of The Watchtower, February 1, 1984. To them it is pagan, illogical and unscriptural. So immediately the word Trinity is mentioned, this is the concept that appears on the video screen of their minds and they want to vehemently oppose it.

2. The New World Bible. This translation produced by the Watchtower Society has not dealt honestly with many of the Scriptures that deal with the Deity of Christ.

3. They Demand to Explain the Infinite. The Witnesses feel comfortable in having just one Person, the Father as God. Jesus Christ is a lesser god, and the Holy Spirit is just an active force. Many Witnesses are not prepared to sit down and study the subject out, even as fully as presented in this Kit! The only way the truth can be found on the subject of the Godhead, is to accept all the Bible says, and leave it at that. Over and over we are told that God is past finding out. The Society places itself in a very serious position when it denies the Deity of Christ and the Personality of the Holy Spirit.

4. Arguments Against the Trinity. The Watchtower Society has prepared a series of arguments and proof texts to deny Christ's Deity, and the Personality of the Holy Spirit. The major problem texts are:

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

OBJECTIONS TO THE DEITY OF CHRIST

a. JESUS WAS ONLY A CREATED BEING.

Revelation 3:1 Jesus Christ is referred to as the beginning of the creation by God (NW). Note this text in the K.I.T. The Greek word (arche) which has been translated beginning, also means the Beginner or origin when used as it is here in an active and not passive sense. This word appears in Titus 3: 1, in the plural as rulers, governments. (Note the original Greek text says creation of God not creation by God, as given in the New World translation!) Most reliable translations, render the text:

(RSV) "...the beginning of God's creation." (NIV) "...the ruler of God's creation." John 1:21, says that Jesus Christ was the Creator, and that everything that was created was created by Him. He did not create Himself, but rather was the One who created and rules God's creation, Colossians 1:16-17.

Colossians 1:15. This text says that Jesus is "the first-born of creation." However in the Bible the word first-born does not mean born first. Note these references to those who were called first-born, but none were born first:

Psalms 89:20, 27 (NW) "I have found David my servant. I myself shall place him as first-born, The most high of the kings of the earth." (David was the eighth son of Jesse.)

Exodus 4:22 (NW) "This is what Jehovah has said: 'Israel is my son, my first-born.'" (Esau was born first)

Jeremiah 31:9. (NW) "and as for Ephraim, he is my first-born." (It was Manasseh who was born first!)

None of the above were born first, but each was given a place of pre-eminence or supremacy. Colossians 1:15-18 is showing that Christ was pre-eminent because He had created all things. Once again he did not create Himself, and thus the Bible shows He was not a created being.

The Greek word used for first-born is protokos, but if Paul wanted to express the idea that Jesus was the first created then he would have used protokistos, from first and create, make: Note how in the New World translation [other] has been added to all things were created by him. This is to give the impression that Jesus was a created being, and He created all other things! In the original 1950 edition of the New World translation, the word other was not even put in brackets! How can loyal and sincere Jehovah's Witnesses ever find the truth when the organization they have put implicit faith in, tampers with the Bible like this?

COLOSSIANS 1:14-23

"He is the image of the invisible God, the first born of all creation, 16 because by means of him, all [other] things were created in the heavens and upon the earth, the things visible and the things invisible, no matter whether they are thrones or lordships or governments or authorities. All [other] things have been created through him and for him. 17 Also he is before all [other] things and by means of him all [other] things were made to exist, 18 and he is the head' of the body."

When the above passage has each "other" deleted, and the simple truth of the Bible allowed to be revealed untampered by any organization, it then becomes very evident that Jesus Christ was not a created being!

Proverbs 8:23 24. This passage in the New World Bible is translated: "Jehovah himself produced me as the beginning of his way, the earliest of his achievements of long ago. From time indefinite I was installed, from the start, from times earlier than the earth."

This passage is used to prove that Christ was created or produced by the Father. There are two fallacies with this:

1. The chapter is referring to Wisdom as a personification, and not to Christ. The heading at the top of the page for Proverbs 8 in the New World Bible says exactly that: Wisdom Personified, a master worker PROVERBS 7: 25-8: 36. Throughout the chapter are the following verses:

2. Jehovah produced or possessed wisdom? The word which the New World Bible has translated produced comes from the Hebrew word Qana. This word is translated in the KJV and NIV as possessed and is the better translation that God always possessed wisdom, otherwise there would have had to be a time when He was without it! Some commentators see a parallel between wisdom and Christ, that both were

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

always with God.

OBJECTIONS TO THE DEITY OF CHRIST

b. JESUS WAS ONLY a god

John 1:1 (NW) is the verse where the Watchtower Society teaches that Jesus was only god, -a powerful godlike one, However although the New World translation in John 1:1, presents Jesus as a god, this same translation in Isaiah 9:6, has shown Him to be the Mighty God! How can these two texts be harmonized? How many Gods does the Society want, for a Almighty God and a Mighty God make TWO? Isaiah 9:6 is obviously an embarrassment to the Society, who would rather emphasize John 1:1, and reduce Jesus to just a god divested of Deity. However as already shown in a previous chapter, to do this the Society in the (NW) Bible has had to add the word a and inconsistently translate the word for God:

The Bible truth is that Jesus is much more than a god - especially when the Bible shows that men, and even Satan (2 Corinthians 4:4) is called a god! Jesus is fully Divine, He is God. The text should read: ... and the Word (Christ) was God!

Note also: John 1:1 introduces Christ as "in the beginning the Word was" not was created or came to be! He was already in existence with God (the Father). It is because He always was, and was with God, that John introduces Him as God - a Divine Person. John's final proof of His Deity was the fact (in verse 3) that all things came into existence through Him, and apart from Him, not even one thing came into existence. This proves that He was God, no angel or man can create. It also proves that He was not created since everything that was created was created by Him. The truth of His Deity could not be clearer!

c. JESUS WAS INFERIOR TO THE FATHER.

John 14:28, Jesus said "My Father is greater than I." How can the two be equal? (This is answered in the Chapter: Is God More Than One Person.)

John 12:44-49, Jesus was sent by the Father, and does His will. How can He then be equal with God? A royal person is often sent on a Royal Tour to another country by their people to represent them. Those sent are very careful in what they say and do abroad. This does not mean that they are inferior to those who sent them. The fact that Christ did His Father's will completely only emphasizes the perfect unity of the Godhead.

1 Corinthians 11:3 (NW) "... the head of every man is the Christ; in turn the head of a woman is the man; in turn the head of the Christ is God." Since the head of Christ is God (the Father) does this mean Jesus is inferior to the Father? This question is answered by considering the statement of Paul "...the head of a woman is the man." In what respect is a woman inferior to a man? Is it in rank or essence? In rank the man is greater, but in essence they are equally human! Because the man is human and greater than the woman, does this mean she is any less human? No, Similarly with the Father and Son. In rank the Father was greater than the Son, but in essence they are both equally Divine. Jesus is not any the less Divine. As the man and woman are both human so Father and Son are both God.

In dealing with this subject one cannot over emphasize the fact that there is perfect unity in the Godhead. There is no tension or competition. If one Person has some task or authority, it does not mean they are superior. In this regard it is well to keep these texts in mind: Matthew 28:18, (NW) And Jesus approached and spoke to them, saying: "All authority has been given me in heaven and on the earth."

John 5:22, (NW) For the Father judges no one at all, but he has committed all the judging to the Son. Was the Son superior then to the Father because all authority and all judging was committed to Him? No! They are a unity receiving equal honor, and this is brought out in the next verse after the Son being named as the Judge: John 5:23 (NW) "In order that all may honor the Son just as they honor the Father. He that does not honor the Son does not honor the Father who sent him." How can two people receive the same honor, unless they are equal?

d. ONLY THE FATHER KNOWS THE TIME OF JESUS COMING.

Mark 13:32ANW) "Concerning that day or the hour nobody knows, neither the angels in heaven nor the Son, but the Father." If Jesus does not know the time of His coming (or Parousia) then He is not equal to the Father, who does. How then can Jesus be God? The answer to this problem lies in determining

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

whether Christ made this statement, because He could not know or chose not to know the time of His coming.

Just before Jesus returned to heaven he was asked: Acts 1:6,7 (NW) "Lord, are you restoring the kingdom to Israel at this time?" He said to them: "It does not belong to YOU to get knowledge of the times or seasons which the Father has placed in his own jurisdiction."

From the above text it is obvious that Jesus did not tell them the time of His coming, not because he could not but rather because He chose not to, because it was not for their best good. He knew it was best for His people to live in a state of readiness and expectation of His return. Throughout Christ's life on earth, there was knowledge and power that was available to Him, which He did not choose to use.

e. GOD CANNOT DIE - BUT JESUS DID.

Habakkuk 1:12 (NW), "Are you not from long ago, O Jehovah? O my God, my Holy One, you do not die." Christ had a dual nature, He was both the Son of Man, and the Son of God. It was His humanity that died. His divinity could not die. Jesus stated that He had power to lay down His life and power to take it up again, John 10: 18 He also said that if his body temple was destroyed that "in three days I will raise it up." John 2:19-21

His Divine nature had power to give life to His human nature. Describing His Deity in the Tomb, it has been said, "As in the womb, so in the Tomb." It was quiescent, however His human nature suffered and was tortured as completely as any other man dying the same death.

f. THERE IS THE ONLY TRUE GOD AND CHRIST.

John 17:3, (NW) "This means everlasting life, their taking in knowledge of you, the only true God, and the one whom you sent forth, Jesus Christ." In this text it is contended that Jesus Christ is excluded from being part of the only true God! That being so, then Christ must be a false 'god', for this New World Bible earlier in John 1A, stated that He is 'a god'. However, a little reflection on this verse soon reveals that this text does not exclude Jesus Christ from being part of this 'only true God'. The emphasis is in contrast to other false gods, in whom there is no salvation.

If a knowledge of the true God means everlasting life, then Jesus Christ must be part of this only true God because: Acts 4:12 (NW) "Furthermore, there is no salvation in anyone else, for there is not another name under heaven that has been given among men by which we must get saved."

1 John 5:13, (NW) "I write these things that YOU may know that YOU have life everlasting YOU who put YOUR faith In the name of the Son of God." The problem that most people have with John 17:3, is to understand how Jesus Christ can be separate from the only true God, and yet still be a member of that God (or Godhead). This can be illustrated by a telegram that could be addressed to the British Royalty:

"The people of Australia know and appreciate the Royal Family, and the one you have sent to represent you on this royal visit to Australia, your eldest son, Charles."

A son is still a member of a royal family unit, even though he is separate from them. Furthermore he is still royal. In a similar way, Jesus was still a member of the Godhead, even though he was separated on this earth. He was still Divine, of the same essence as the Father, He was God.

1 Corinthians 13:6, (NW) "There is actually to us one God the Father, out of whom all things are, and we for him; and there is one Lord, Jesus Christ, through whom all things are, and we through him. The Watchtower Society argues that this text means that there is but one God and that this is just the one person of the Father. Therefore any teaching upholding the Deity of Christ or the Trinity can not be true! However, does this text mean that God the Father is God exclusively? Why does the Bible so often use the term, God the Father, if only the person of the Father was God?

Why did Paul write to the Galatians: Galatians 1:1, (NW) "Paul, an apostle neither from men nor through a man, but through Jesus Christ and God the Father, who raised him up from the dead." Paul could have quite easily have written, "...through Jesus Christ and God, who raised him up from the dead"! Why add the Father? It was because the Son had also been revealed as a Divine Being, - as God!

(An interesting study can be conducted on God the Father: Malachi 2:10 (NW) "Is it not one father that all of us have? Is it not one God that has created us? Our Jehovah's Witness friends would be quick to agree that this is God the Father, - the only true God! However, now go back to a text mentioned a number of times before and closely examine what it has to say about Father and also about God. Who is it talking about in this verse? Jesus! Isaiah 9:6 (NW) "Mighty God, Eternal Father." Father and Son are both God. Members of the one true God. Both of them are also Lord!

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

g. THE MEDIATOR BETWEEN GOD AND MAN WAS THE MAN CHRIST JESUS

1 Timothy 2:5 (NW) "There is one God and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus."

The argument is that since Christ is the mediator, - the man Christ Jesus, and He mediates between God and man, He cannot Himself be God. Rather than prove that Jesus cannot be God, this verse shows the value of Jesus being both God and man. Only by being God can Jesus fully comprehend the claims of God, and only by being man can Jesus fully comprehend the needs of Men. He is thus the perfect bridge between God and men, the perfect mediator!

(The Watchtower Society will allow that Jesus was more than a man, their publications will even grant Him a status as high as the Archangel! So any argument that He was only a man, because of this text, is not what they really believe anyway. The truth is of course that this Archangel, was fully Divine, He was God!)

OBJECTIONS TO THE PERSON OF THE HOLY SPIRIT

a. HOW CAN THE HOLY SPIRIT BE A PERSON AND FILL PEOPLE?

On the day of Pentecost the Bible says that they were all filled with the Holy Spirit. It is argued that for this to happen, the Holy Spirit would have had to be an active force, and not a person.

Furthermore people are baptized in the Spirit, and once again the Watchtower Society believes this could not happen if the Spirit was a person. The answer to this question is no problem if we realize that while the Holy Spirit has all the attributes of personality, and as such is a Person, it is still spirit. People can be possessed by evil spirits, so it is no problem for people likewise to be possessed by the Holy Spirit.

b. HOW CAN THE HOLY SPIRIT BE A PERSON AND BE "POURED OUT"?

The fact that the Holy Spirit is "poured out" is also no problem, because we often speak of people "pouring out themselves" or being "immersed" in someone's personality. The Bible even speaks of Jesus "pouring out" his soul: Isaiah 53:12, (NW) "...due to the fact that he poured out his soul to the very death." If the Bible says Jesus could pour out his soul, then the expression that the Person of the Holy Spirit, which after all is spirit, is also poured out, should be no problem to us!

SHOULD YOU BELIEVE IN THE TRINITY?

In 1989 The Watchtower Society published: 'Should You Believe in the Trinity?' In this booklet the Society has wrested many of the quotations out of context to make the authors appear to say the opposite of what they believed. Other quotations are taken from liberal scholars who themselves do not believe in the authenticity of the Bible let alone the Trinity. Few quotes give the page or chapter numbers to make it difficult to check the Society's dishonest scholarship.

However, Robert M. Bowman Jr. has done just this in: 'Why You Should Believe in the Trinity' Available from Baker Book House or Koorong Books.

24. Salvation

Of all the erroneous teachings of the Watchtower Society, none are more tragic than those involving the subject of salvation. Only one Witness in every three hundred believes it is necessary and professes to be a born-again Christian. The rest are perishing with Bibles in their hands. This tragedy is because the Society teaches:

TWO CLASSES

1. The Heavenly:

This class is made up of a literal 144,000 spiritual Israelites, ie. "born-again" Christians, selected since the time of Christ. These are said to be---those who belong to Christ(See You Can Live Forever in

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

Paradise on Earth, page 172). They are believed to have gone to heaven as spirits in 1918 in the First Resurrection. This Resurrection is believed to be still taking place today. When these people die it is believed that they are changed in the twinkling of an eye to be spirits and go to heaven, where they will rule and remain for all eternity.

[The Bible presents a problem for such a teaching when it clearly teaches in 1 Thessalonians 4:16-17, that at the First Resurrection, the "dead in Christ" are resurrected and go to heaven "together with" those who are living in Christ. This means that in 1918, all the heavenly class who were living at that time should have been caught up in the air with those who had been resurrected. The Watchtower Society has no answer for this problem!]

In 1996 of the 5,167,258 who claimed to be Witnesses, only 8,757 claimed to be of this 144,000/heavenly class. Most of these are elderly Americans!

2. The Earthly:

This class is made up of people down through the history of mankind. They are not born-again, nor do they -belong to Christ as the heavenly class. Their hope is to survive Armageddon. This should be accomplished if they remain as faithful Jehovah's Witnesses, obeying God's Laws as interpreted by the Watchtower Society, and putting in their hours of witnessing each month.

After Armageddon, they expect to live on the earth and stand a final test at the end of the 1000 years when Satan is loosed. If they prove faithful they will be given everlasting life then, for eternity. Their salvation is largely accomplished by their own works. Little real emphasis is placed on Christ's atoning death. It is mentioned but in effect is not stressed or of vital importance. In 1996, 5,158,501 of the 5,167,258 Witnesses world-wide, professed to be of this earthly class.

ALL MUST BE LED BY THE SPIRIT

The Bible teaches that all must be led by the Spirit, and be spiritual, if they are going to be saved. Romans chapter 8 is very clear that there are only two classes, those who are led by the Spirit, and those who are not. In the New World Bible, these classes are described as those in accord with the spirit or the minding of the spirit, and the others are those in accord with the flesh or the minding of the flesh. For one there is life and peace, and for the other there is death. There is no intermediate group of an earthly class who are neither born-again spirit-led people, nor are they going to be lost! The truth is that if these earthly people are not led by the Spirit as the heavenly profess to be then according to the Bible they are definitely lost! Read Romans 8:11-17 and there is no other conclusion that one can come to. This passage is an elaboration of the truth that Jesus taught to Nicodemus:

YOU MUST BE BORN AGAIN!

In order to be saved Jesus said: John 3:7 (NW) – "YOU people must be born again." John 3:3-8 is very clear concerning the necessity of being born-again. The "YOU people" of John 3:7 is not addressed merely to Nicodemus, the disciples or even the 144,000 class. It is addressed to ALL who want to be saved. However the Watchtower Society tragically applies this just to the 144,000 class of whom there was only 8,757 in 1996 in all the world. These then are all among those professing to be Jehovah's Witnesses, who could be saved!

In this kit, scores of erroneous and changed teachings and mistakes that have been made by the Watchtower Society have been outlined, but none are as serious as this!

JESUS CHRIST MUST BE MADE THE CENTRE OF ONE'S FAITH

Jehovah's Witnesses have been taught that Christendom has made Christ everything to the detriment of the Father. To right what they believe is an imbalance, they have placed the emphasis on Jehovah God the Father, to the exclusion of Jesus Christ. When one understands the Trinity teaching, he understands that there is no tension between Father and Son, but a beautiful relationship and perfect harmony. "God was in Christ reconciling the world to Himself." Jesus said that He was the Way, the Truth and the Life, and that no one could come to the Father except by Him.

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

ALL SALVATION IS IN JESUS CHRIST

Acts 4:12 (NW) "Furthermore, there is no salvation in anyone else, for there is not another name under heaven that has been given among men by which we must get saved." (See the previous chapters, especially pages 35, 37-39.)

SALVATION BY FAITH IS OURS NOW!

1 John 5:11-13 (NW) "And this is the witness given, that God gave us everlasting life, and this life is in his Son. He that has the Son has this life: he that does not have the Son of God does not have this life. I write YOU these things that YOU may know that YOU have life everlasting, YOU who put YOUR faith in the name of the Son of God."

THE ERRORS OF THE WATCHTOWER SOCIETY'S

1. Christ must be made the Centre of all Doctrine. Paul's message was "Jesus Christ and Him Crucified" 1 Corinthians 2:1-2.
2. All must be Born Again. John 3:21-5, Romans 8:4-17. Those who are not born-again are eternally lost.
3. Every Believer has a Heavenly Hope. Believers are baptized into the one body of Christ, 1 Corinthians 12:13. There is only one fold and one hope. Eph. 4:4, 5; John 10:14-16. Those outside of this fold are lost.
4. There is Only One Resurrection for Believers. The dead in Christ means all who have exercised faith in Him. Those in Old Testament times did as they stew the lamb which pointed forward to Christ, "the Lamb of God." Since His death believers have been able to have faith in the reality of this event. All these will be resurrected at the last day.
5. There is No Second Chance. Today is the accepted time, 2 Corinthians 6:2. The Bible says that after death is the judgment, Hebrews 9:27. There will be no second chance during the 1000 years. (See Chapter 14.)

FORMER WITNESSES FIND SALVATION

One of the thrilling things in working for Witnesses, is to see them leave off the Watchtower teachings and saturate themselves with the pure "word of God". This both sanctifies them (John 17:17, - Sanctify them through thy truth: thy word is truth.") and they become born again. (1 Peter 1:23, "Being born again by the word of God.") As they accept Jesus Christ as their Lord and Savior, they find assurance of salvation, and the peace that passes understanding! The Watchtower Society teaches only a literal 144,000 people, made up of those living since the time of Christ, will go to heaven. However, the Bible teaches that all who are saved since the time of Adam will go to heaven, both the 144,000 as well as the "great crowd- of all ages.

25. The 144,000

A. WHO ARE THE 144,000?

All the Bible teaches concerning the 144,000 is found in just thirteen verses, Revelation 7:1-8, and 14:1-5:

1. Revelation 7:1-8 teaches this group are sealed while the angels are holding back the winds which will hurt or harm the earth, sea, trees etc. (They are made up just before the Seven Last Plagues of Revelation 16:1-21 of which Armageddon is the 6th). The 144,000 are made up of 12,000 from each of the 12 tribes of Israel.
2. Revelation 14:11-5 teaches that the 144,000 are with Christ -before the throne-having been

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

redeemed (or bought [NW1 from the earth). They are a faultless group, All other information on the 144,000 is mere interpretation or more often speculation.

B. IS THE 144,000 A LITERAL NUMBER?

Revelation 7:4-8, states the 144,000 are 12,000 from each of the 12 tribes of Israel. Is this to be understood to be a literal or spiritual number? It cannot be both! However the Watchtower Society teaches it is a literal number of spiritual Israelites, that is Jehovah's Witnesses, which is very inconsistent to say the least!

C. THE GREAT CROWD IS ALSO IN HEAVEN!

The Bible never says specifically that the 144,000 are "in heaven". This however seems obvious from Revelation 14:1-4 where they are singing "before the throne." Now in Revelation 7:9-10 after the 144,000 have been introduced a "great crowd" (NW), "great multitude" (KJV) which no man can number, is also depicted in a setting similar to Revelation 14:1-4 and this second group is also said to be "before the throne". Before the Throne = In Sight of the Throne. In the Kingdom Interlinear translation, where this expression in both Revelation 7:9 for the Great Crowd and Revelation 14:3 for the 144,000 is translated in sight of the throne.) Revelation 1191(NW) leaves no doubt that the -great crowd- are also in heaven praising God: "After these things I heard what was as a loud voice of a great crowd in heaven. They said "Praise Yah."

D. PEOPLE LIVING BEFORE CHRIST WILL BE IN HEAVEN

Matthew 8:11, 12 (NW) "But I tell YOU that many from eastern parts and western parts will come and recline at the table with Abraham and Isaac and Jacob in the kingdom of the heavens; whereas the sons of the kingdom will be thrown into the darkness outside."

Hebrews 11:10, 16, "They were looking for a heavenly country with a city built by God. (This is not a city here on this earth Hebrews 13:14.

E. CAN THE GREAT CROWD ALSO BE PRIESTS AND KINGS?

a. Priests.

1 Peter 2:5,9(NW) "YOU yourselves also as living stones are being built up a spiritual house for the purpose of a holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices acceptable to God through Jesus Christ.. But YOU are a 'chosen race, a royal priesthood, that YOU should declare abroad the excellencies' of the one that called YOU out of darkness into his wonderful light."

These texts show that all who are called out of darkness into the Truth, are considered "priests" to offer up spiritual sacrifices. These sacrifices which are offered up to God include prayer, praise, thanksgiving as well as one's whole being. Romans 12:1, 2. If in this life all those who are called out of darkness into the Truth, (this must include the great crowd) are considered "priests" as part of a holy priesthood, would they not continue to offer these spiritual sacrifices throughout all eternity? As shown in Revelation 19:1 they were offering praise to God.

b. Kings.

Note in the above texts it does not mention just priesthood but rather a "royal" priesthood.

Romans 8:117(NW) "If, then, we are children, we are also heirs; heirs indeed of God, but joint heirs with Christ."

John 1:12(NW) "However, as many as did receive him, to them he gave authority to become God's children."

From these two texts it is obvious ALL who receive Christ are God's children and joint-heirs with Christ. When Christ takes up His throne and kingdom, it is obvious that all these "joint-heirs" will inherit this kingdom, sit on His throne as He promised in Revelation 3:21 and naturally rule with Him, who is the

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

“King of Kings” Revelation 17:14. This ruler ship will include a work of judging, Revelation 20:4, which will even include judging angels 1 Corinthians 6:1-3.

F. THE BIBLE AND THE 144,000

Most of the New Testament/Greek Scriptures are considered to apply to only the 144,000 class, and not to the great crowd. Since the Old Testament/Hebrew Scriptures only directly applies to the Jews it means very little of the Bible is considered directly relevant to this great crowd class, of whom nearly every Jehovah's Witness today belongs. (In 1996 of the 5,167,258 who claimed to be Witnesses, 5,158,501 claimed to belong to the great crowd.)

If for instance one reads John 14:1-3 to a Witness, he will not believe the Lord's promise applies to him, because the Watchtower Society says it is only for the 144,000 class! Yet that passage is addressed to all who believe in God. As one progresses in the chapter, other texts are allowed to be applied to a member of the great crowd class! It is all a matter of interpretation on the part of the Watchtower Society. In such matters the Jehovah's Witness has implicit faith in the Society.

G. THE DANGER OF THE 144,000 TEACHING

This is the most damning teaching of the Watchtower Society. It is going to lead millions of sincere Jehovah's Witnesses to destruction. (See the chapter on Salvation, on page 45 of this Kit).

H. THE HISTORY OF THE 144,000 TEACHING

In the very first years of the Watchtower Society, it was expected that a bodily resurrection of the saints would take place in 1878. When this did not happen it was then concluded the resurrection did take place then, but it was invisible. It was then concluded that those who died after 1878, would be instantaneously changed, in the twinkling of an eye, and would be resurrected as spirits. In Thy Kingdom Come, (Volume 3 of Studies in the Scriptures, page 234) Pastor Russell taught that the holy apostles and others had been resurrected and they as well as the Lord are present in the earth, although they could not be seen. (On page 61 there is a photocopy of this statement) Later the date for the Resurrection was changed to 1918, and the number of those who would be resurrected to rule in the heavens, was limited to 144,000. In the early 1930's when* the Society was already numbering over 144,000 it was decided to bring in the teaching concerning the great crowd. This is why most of the 144,000 class are elderly, having belonged to the Society before this number was made up.

26. The Memorial Service

The Memorial Service, better known in other churches as the Lord's Supper or Communion Service is held only once a year, round Easter or at the time of the Jewish Passover, by the Watchtower Society.

Only those who believe they are of the heavenly class, the remnant" or the "144,000 class" partake of the emblems of the bread and the cup. The others have been taught that to do so, would be to drink eternal damnation to themselves. The result today is that in most Kingdom Halls when the Memorial Service is celebrated, the emblems are passed around and no one partakes because there are no members of this heavenly class still living in that local congregation.

This evening is one to which every Witness, interest and backslider is urged to attend. Visitors are also warmly welcomed. There is a tradition among Witnesses that Armageddon could come at this time and the "angel of death" would pass over those gathered in a Kingdom Hall. Thus literally millions of backslidden and inactive Witnesses attend that night. (This explains why the 1996 Memorial Attendance was 12,921,931 world-wide when during that year the number of Peak Publishers, was only 5,413,7690.

Of the 12,921,933 who attended that Memorial Service only 8,757 professed to be of the "born-again" heavenly class, and partook of the emblems of the bread and cup. The ordinance of humility or foot washing ceremony is never practiced, and most Witnesses do not even know Christ commanded it. John

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

13:14, 15.

The Taking of the Emblems is Essential to Salvation!

The Bible teaches that every believer has a solemn responsibility to partake of the emblems of this service. The results of following the teaching of the Watchtower on this subject will mean that millions of their sincere people will be lost, for Jesus taught very plainly that there is no resurrection and everlasting life for those who do not "eat His flesh and drink His blood"!

These are the warning words of Jesus: Accordingly Jesus said to them: "Most truly I say to YOU, Unless YOU eat the flesh of the Son of man and drink his blood, YOU have no life in yourselves. He that feeds on my flesh and drinks my blood has everlasting life and I shall resurrect him at the last day." John 6:53, 54 (NW).

To help your Witness friend:

1. Point out to the Witness, that this is referring to those who are depending on a resurrection to everlasting life and must refer to the earthly class, (since the heavenly class are all in heaven and those still living on the earth do not depend on a resurrection, but believe they are "changed" at the moment of death, to be spirits and go to heaven!)

2. Then show how Jesus left them in no doubt as to how they were to eat His flesh and drink His blood, as He said at the last supper: "Take eat. This means my body." "Drink out of it, all of YOU, for this means my 'blood of the covenant.'" Matthew 26:26-28, (NW).

The Society also applies the passage of John 6:52-65 to the "Lord's evening meal." See The Watchtower, March 1, 1978, page 10:

"So, In the discussion recorded In John 6:52-65 Jesus was not talking about the world mankind as the ones to drink his blood as well as eating his flesh, figuratively, during his millennial reign. He was talking about believers whom he would bring into the new covenant (**Jeremiah** 31:31-34; Revelation 20:4-6) These would become spiritual Israelites. This is why, when Jesus inaugurated the "lord's evening meal," He said to His Israelite apostles: "This is the new covenant by virtue of my which is to be poured out in your behalf." (Luke 22:20; 1 Corinthians 11:20-25)

Unfortunately in applying John 6:52-56 to the "Lord's evening meal", the Society still only allows for the "spiritual Israelite" believers, or the heavenly 144,000 class to partake of the emblems. The earthly class are still not included. So for them there is not the promised "everlasting life" and resurrection of John 6:54.

Now the tragedy of the Watchtower Society with this teaching begins to come together. The example already quoted of the 1991 Memorial Service, as 12,921,933 in attendance world-wide, but only 8,757 partaking of the emblems. It means that 12,913,176 people were sitting in the Kingdom Halls around the world, with Bibles in their hands, but perishing, because they were denied the very emblems of what Jesus said meant "life" to them. He then qualified this in the next verse as "everlasting life" with the promise of being resurrected at the last day.

This subject is one that cannot be taken lightly. Many of the subjects in this kit will not mean one's salvation or damnation if they are not understood or followed; however, this subject is different It is linked with one being "Born-again", in fellowship with Jesus Christ, and cleansed from sin by their Lord and Savior. Unless they have this understanding and relationship with Jesus Christ, they will be lost! May God help us to save them!

The Three Emblems

At the original Lord's Supper, Christ used and instituted three emblems: The Bread, the Cup and the Towel.

A. The Bread. The Society rightly uses at their Memorial Service "unleaven" bread, because leaven or fermentation represents sin, 1 Corinthians 5:6-8. In the New World Bible V.8:"Consequently let us keep the festival, not with unfermented cakes of sincerity and truth. "

B. The Cup. (The word wine is never used in the Bible in connection with this service). In view of the above symbol being unfermented cakes one would expect the sinless blood of Christ to be symbolized by unfermented grape juice. However the Watchtower Society uses fermented red wine! When this inconsistency is pointed out to many Witnesses, it comes as a shock to them!

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

C. The Towel. Read John 13:4-17 (N.W.) especially verses 14 and 15:
“Therefore, if I, although Lord and Teacher, washed YOUR feet, YOU also ought to wash the feet of one another. For I set the pattern for YOU, that, just as I did to YOU, YOU should do also.”

This command of Christ could hardly be more direct! Then show your Witness friend:

1. When Peter at first refused to partake, Verse 8, Jesus said, Unless I wash you, you have no part with me. It is serious not to partake. It is part of our communion with Him.
2. This command cannot be spiritualized away as a custom of the East. It is like baptism, a command of Christ.
3. It is like a partial baptism, a spiritual stocktaking when a man examines himself 1 Corinthians 11:28 makes everything right between himself and God and then symbolizes it with this cleansing. The person is then ready to partake of the emblems of Christ's sinless body, and His death.
4. Jesus said, “If YOU know these things, happy YOU are if YOU do them. “ John 13:17 (NW).

What people are carrying out these instructions of Jesus Christ in this meaningful and solemn service? - Only the Seventh-day Adventists, and a welcome awaits you!

27. War and Alternative Military Service

Some Christian organizations have conscientious objections to military service which involves the shedding of blood. Our friends the Jehovah's Witnesses and we Seventh-day Adventists share these convictions. However, in most countries to such religious groups, other alternatives are offered by their respective governments. These alternatives include medical work etc... which Adventists happily accept. On the other hand the Watchtower Society will not allow the Jehovah's Witnesses any alternative service, believing it would be a “compromise” that would break their integrity with God. The Witness position is one that has caused its people much suffering and imprisonment. Which position follows the example of Christ and is scriptural?

SOME OBJECTIONS TO ALTERNATIVE MILITARY SERVICE

- Some of the objections offered by the Watchtower Society to such alternative service would be:
1. A Christian should have nothing to do with military service or war otherwise it would be a “compromise”.
 2. Such work would be assisting the “war machine
 3. Healing the wounded would enable them to return to the battlefield and shed more blood for which the medic would be partly responsible.

CHRIST'S EXAMPLE

In Christ's day Rome had conquered the then known world. Its army of occupation was in Israel, and the Jews deeply hated the Romans involved in Military service. So with this background it is interesting to see what Jesus did and the directives he gave on this subject.

a. Matthew 5:41 (NW) “And if someone under authority impresses you into service for a mile, go with him two miles.” The Romans were empowered to make a Jew carry his equipment for a mile. This would be obviously helping the Roman army, but what did Jesus say? He told His followers to carry it for two miles! In the light of the Watchtower Society's arguments, this would have to be considered - compromise” to have anything to do with the army!

b. Matthew 8:5-10 (NW) In this account an army officer, a Roman centurion with a hundred soldiers under his command, came to Jesus and asked for healing for one of his slaves/servants. The officer was quite open with Christ that this servant was also part of the Roman military “war machine- to carry out his commands. Jesus could have refused to have had anything to do with this Centurion, but Jesus complied with his request and healed the servant. Adventists believe that they comply with the requests of governments to be medics and follow the example of Jesus in doing a work of healing. If that Roman servant later had have carried out his master's command to put some Jewish malefactor to death, would

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

Jesus have been responsible for the blood shed, for having healed this servant? No! Adventists take the same attitude today, which is the example Jesus set.

c. Luke 22:50-52(NW) and John 18:10-11(NW). Jesus became involved in a conflict when He was betrayed by Judas in the Garden of Gethsemane. On one side was Judas's crowd armed with swords etc... and Jesus own disciples on the other side. Peter determined to defend Jesus lurched at Malchus, the servant of the high priest, and cut off his ear. Jesus rebuked Peter for this and told him to put his sword up. Jesus then moved forward and took the time and trouble to heal Malchus's ear. Once again the example of Jesus Christ is clear for his people not to use arms, but to do a work of healing.

Seventh-day Adventists believe the position they take is completely scriptural. The position of the Watchtower Society is not only unscriptural, but it is so extreme it has caused sincere Witnesses around the world much hardship, suffering, imprisonment and even death.

EXTREMES AND INCONSISTENCIES

In his book, *Crisis of Conscience*, the author, Raymond Franz tells how on a number of occasions a majority in the Governing Body of the Society wanted to change the position of the Society to "alternative service". However, each time the move failed as a "hard core" felt such a change would be embarrassing, a compromise, or it would be unfair to those who had already suffered for their previous stand.

Franz also tells a heart-rendering story of the needless persecution of thousands of Witnesses in Malawi because of the directive by the Watchtower Society's Governing Body not to buy a required government membership card. However, in his chapter, "Double Standards" he gives documented evidence that at the same time Witnesses in Mexico were allowed to obtain falsified documents of military service by bribery.

THE BIBLE ALTERNATIVE

A large proportion of Christ's ministry was devoted to healing and relieving suffering. This example can be followed in war or in peace. A Christian can do this work and not "shed blood". It is an excellent alternative, and it is scriptural.

The Watchtower Society has changed so many of its teachings down through the years, we can hope and pray this may become another. Then the needless suffering of so many of its people would be stopped. Perhaps if the members of the Governing Body lived in countries which did not enjoy the privileges and freedom of the United States, they might be more "encouraged" to look for these "alternatives" which Christ gave as an example!

28. Attitude To Governments

NOT PART OF THE WORLD

The Watchtower Society encourages its members to adhere strictly to a position of neutrality, not only in regards to war, but also to politics. Because Jesus said, "My Kingdom is not of this world." John 18:36, the Watchtower Society interprets this to mean that Christians should not vote for anything to do with governments at any level.

GOVERNMENTS ORDAINED BY GOD

Romans 13:1-7, states that the "higher powers" or governments are set up by God, "ordained" (KJV). Christians are to support such institutions. Voting is one of the ways in doing this a privilege and duty for all Christians. The Society has altered its teaching on the "higher powers" twice. (See page 13). Its attitudes to governments has suffered as a result, and this includes its attitude to voting.

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

It is interesting that a Witness is allowed to be a member of a militant trade union, and yet not allowed to vote for a political party, even though they are not members of it! The positions generally taken by the Watchtower Society are ones that are extreme, inconsistent and unscriptural. These include not only voting, but attitudes to those in authority, and saluting flags.

29. The Ten Commandments

Down through the years, Watchtower publications have been full of statements which give the impression that they believe and uphold the keeping of the Ten Commandments:

“Anyone today who is familiar with the Bible and the life of Christ can clearly see the profound difference between what Jesus and the early apostles did and what the clergy of Christendom are doing. Nineteen hundred years ago Christians were strong in faith. Where is that faith today in Christendom? God's book, the Holy Bible, is considered by many as a fine piece of literary work but the Ten Commandments are just to be read, not something to live by.” WATCHTOWER, JANUARY 1, 1963.

“Therefore God gave His law through Moses to the Israelites and which applies to all who want to do right, and the first in order and first in importance of His commandments or fundamental law is this, to wit:

20:1 And God spoke all these words, saying,

20:2 I am the LORD thy God, which have brought thee out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage.

20:3 Thou shall have no other gods before me.

20:4 Thou shall not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness of any thing that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth:

20:5 Thou shall not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them: for I the LORD thy God am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation of them that hate me;

20:6 And showing mercy unto thousands of them that love me, and keep my commandments.

“The law of God never changes, because God never changes. (Malachi 3:6) His law points out the way to everlasting life. No creature will ever be given life everlasting who willfully, that is, intentionally violates God's law. If man chooses another for his God, Jehovah will not grant to that man life. For a man to violate the fundamental law of God means that that man puts himself on the side of the Devil, who therefore leads him to destruction. For the benefit man, then, God provided in his law that man should have no other god before Him, because God alone is the source of life.” ENEMIES, Page 94

“Jehovah's witnesses respect the flag, their Biblical obligations and relationship to God strictly forbid them to salute any image. To Jehovah's servants this would be an act of worship contrary to the principles set forth In the Ten Commandments. (Exodus 20: 6)” Yearbook, 1975, Page 169.

“In all parts of the world, Jehovah's Witnesses do not take part in such ceremonies as the saluting of the flag and the singing of national anthems. Why not? Because to them this would constitute an act of worship in direct violation of the first and second of the Ten Commandments. Exodus 20:3-5.” AWAKE! - SEPTEMBER 22, 1978

“Is the use of images, for example, worship “with spirit and truth”? Does it please God? At Exodus 20:4, 5, in one of the Ten Commandments, God Himself says: “You shall not make yourself a carved image or any likeness of anything in heaven or on earth.” THE TRUTH THAT LEADS TO ETERNAL LIFE, PAGE 25.

“God Forbids Making Any Image Before Which People Bow In Worship. Exodus 20:4, 5 You must not make for yourself a carved Image or a form like anything that is in the heavens above or that is on the earth underneath or that is in the waters under the earth. You must not bow down to them nor be induced to serve them, because I Jehovah your God am a God exacting exclusive devotion.” MAKE SURE OF ALL THINGS, Page 247.

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

In helping Witnesses on the subject of the commandments:

1. Firmly point out that either a person keeps "the commandments of God" or he does not! There is no middle road of quoting them when it suits (to show Catholics they should not worship images, or the government why they do not salute flags etc.) and then discard them at will when confronted with the commandment of God to keep the seventh-day Sabbath.

2. Use the Bible expression, "commandments", as a law code separate from other laws of the Bible, and show the commandments of God are to be kept by Christians, Revelation 14: 12; Revelation 12:17; 1 John 5:2,3; 1 Corinthians 7:19.

3. Many have accepted Ephesians 6:1, 2 as a powerful passage in proving that the New Testament writers believed that the Ten Commandments were still to be obeyed. "Children, be obedient to your parents in union with the Lord, for this is righteous. Honor your father and your mother, which is the first command with a promise." (NW)

4. The Two Laws. God wrote the Ten Commandments on tables of stone with His own hand, and these were kept separate in the Ark of the Covenant. The entire law code for Israel was written by Moses and kept in the side of the Ark. For almost a 1,000 years the Ten Commandments were singled out in this manner. In the minds of the early Christians, who had largely come out of Judaism, there was no question that the expression, commandments of God, were all of the Ten!

5. In the New Testament. Show that James 2:10-12 points out there is a whole law which forbids killing or committing adultery. By this law Christians are going to be judged. Then show there is another whole law including circumcision which must not be kept by Christians. Galatians 5:1-3. Obviously there must be Two Laws in the New Testament. 1 Corinthians 7:19 (N.W.) explains this: "Circumcision does not mean a thing, and uncircumcision means not a thing, but observance of God's commandments [does]."

See *Is it the Watchtower?* by E. B. Price, page 56, for a summary and illustration of the Two Laws. Use charts, visuals or even rough drawings like this to illustrate this Bible truth.

30. The Sabbath

The Watchtower Society emphasizes in its publications the need for Christians to obey and please God. It therefore is a shock to many to learn that Jehovah's Witnesses are not taught to observe the Bible Sabbath for Jehovah God. In fact they do not observe any day at all, be it the seventh day Sabbath or Sunday. (They did once regard Sunday as a holy day, in their early years.) "Studies" Volume 6, Page 386-387. Their refusal to keep the Sabbath is because they are taught that the weekly Sabbath finished with Christ's death. To do this they must also concede that the Ten Commandments were done away with at that time.

Furthermore, the Watchtower Society teaches that each day of creation was a period of 7,000 years, including the seventh-day, which God blessed and sanctified ("made sacred" Genesis 2:2,3 N.W.) at that time. It is therefore contended that we are still in this Sabbath period which has extended from the time of Adam, and Witnesses are therefore taught that everyday is the Sabbath now.

To help Witnesses see the truth on the Sabbath:

1. Point out the inconsistency of the Watchtower Society as it upholds the Ten Commandments when it suits them, and will even disfellowship its members for breaking some of them. However, when the seventh-day Sabbath is presented, they immediately contend these "commandments of God" were done away with, along with the Jewish laws.

2. Show that each day of creation was a twenty-four hour period of "an evening and a morning". (See the next Chapter for a study on this subject.)

3. Give a study on the Sabbath throughout the Ages, using the outline at the bottom of this page. They will agree with most of your presentation before the time of Christ, but believe this only applied to the Jews. However the example of Sabbath-keeping by Christ, His apostles and the early church will impress them, along with the fact that God's people in the Last Days will be keeping all God's commandments, and the Sabbath will also be observed in the New World.

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

These are some points to emphasis:

- a. It was Christ's custom to keep the Sabbath. Luke 4:16.
- b. Jesus expected it would still be, being kept long after His death, when Jerusalem would be destroyed. Matthew 24:20.
- c. Jesus claimed it was His. He had created it, and He is therefore, "Lord of the Sabbath". Mark 2:27, 28.
- d. Many years after Christ's death, Luke a Gentile referred to the seventh-day Sabbath as, "the Sabbath according to the commandment". Luke 23:54-56.
- e. Paul said Christians should keep the "commandments of God" but not the Jewish laws like circumcision. 1 Corinthians 7: 19.
- f. Paul preached to the Gentiles as well as the Jews on the Sabbath. In Antioch, Acts 13:44, "The next Sabbath nearly all the city gathered together to hear the word of Jehovah."(NW) Note: this would have been in the city market place, not the synagogue. It was a Gentile city.
- g. At Philippi, Paul acknowledged the Sabbath in a quiet place by the riverside outside the city. Acts 16:13. Why did Luke the writer of Acts mention it was the Sabbath if it had no significance to Christians?
- h. Hebrews 4:9 (N.W) says, "So there remains a Sabbath resting (Gr. sabbatismos means "sabbathising" or "keeping a weekly Sabbath") for the people of God." Verse 10 warns of unbelief /disobedience for those who do not rest just as God did." see verse 4. While the passage has a spiritual application it also has a very literal one dealing with disobedience.
- i. If people profess to be Christians but refuse to keep God's commandments, then the Bible says they are liars, and they do not have the truth. 1 John 2:3, 4.
- j. Christians are to love God and keep His commandments. "For this is what the love of God means, that we observe his commandments, and yet his commandments are not burdensome." 1 John 5:1
- k. The Devil does not want people to keep God's Commandments. He is violently opposed to them. In the Last Days he will war against the "remnant church" of the ages which observe the commandments of God". Revelation 12:17.
- l. God has a people living in the Last Days before Christ returns who "observe the commandments of God and the faith of Jesus." Revelation 14:12, 14. One can not argue that it is impossible to observe the Commandments of God, because the Bible says His people are "observing" them!
- m. In the New World, the Sabbath will be observed, with everyone coming to worship Jehovah, Sabbath by Sabbath throughout Eternity. Isaiah 66:22, 23.

To answer objections:

Colossians 2:16,17. The Jewish holy days such as the Passover, were called "Sabbaths" and they foreshadowed with their blood sacrifices, the ministry and life of Christ. These were no longer to be kept after Christ died. However the seventh-day Sabbath was not one of these "shadows" since it was instituted "made sacred" Genesis 2:2, NW) before man sinned, sacrifices were commenced and the Messiah was promised.

Acts 15:28, 29. The Sabbath was not included in this list. However, the Ten Commandments was obviously not under discussion since there was nothing mentioned about lying, stealing, killing etc.

Romans 10:4. "Christ is the end of the Law for righteousness." God's laws define sin and are needed as such, but only Christ can give us righteousness.

Ephesians 2:15. It was the "law of commandments contained in ordinances that was abolished (see KJV). The context (verse 11) shows that it was not the Ten Commandments under discussion but laws contained in ordinances dealing with Jewish decrees such as circumcision. See 1 Corinthians 7:19.

For further helpful information read Chapters 6 and 8, in Is it The Watchtower, by E. B. Price.

31. The Days Of Creation

A. *Literal 24 Hour days*

The Watchtower Society has taught in the past that each day of Creation consisted of a period of 7,000 years. They now teach that they are billions of years long. Show your Witness friends that they could not have been periods of thousands or billions of years because:

1. God Spoke Everything into Existence. Hebrews 11:1

It happened as soon as He spoke. Psalm 33:6, 9. The Genesis account bears this out "And God said." Genesis 1:3, 6, 9, 11, 14, 20. "and it was so." Genesis 1:7, 9, 11, 15 etc. The New World Bible has been translated in the first chapters of Genesis to give the impression that each day of Creation was a long period of time. Thus Genesis 1:3 is translated: "And God proceeded to say: Let light come to be. Then there came to be light." Most translations translate this verse: "And God said, 'Let there be light: and there was light.'"

2. The Day of Creation in Every Case was a Period of Darkness and a Period of Light.

For each of the six days in which God was doing a creative work, we are told at the conclusion of the events, that the evening and the morning were the day. This is used for emphasis, to emphasize the fact that these days were not long periods of time. Genesis 1:4, 5 tell how God created light, and divided it into light and darkness. This light no doubt shone from Himself and as the earth turned on its axis in the 24 hour period, it was thus divided into day and night, the period of the morning and the evening. The Bible does not say, evenings and mornings, it was just one evening, or night, and the one morning or the period of light.

3. Vegetation Was Created on the Third Day, and the Sun on the Fourth.

While light was created by God on the First Day, sunlight from the sun, which is vital to living plants, was not created until the fourth day, which was after plants were created. It would have meant that vegetation would have had to have lived for 7,000 years etc. without sunlight.

4. Vegetation Cannot Exist Without Insects to Pollinate Them.

Genesis 1:25 tells that the creeping things were created on the Sixth Day. If each day of creation were 7,000 years, then vegetation created on the Third Day would have had to wait 21,000 years before there were any insects such as bees, moths, butterflies etc. which science has proved are absolutely essential for the life of plants.

5. God Spoke Everything into Existence Fully Matured.

Adam and Eve were created fully mature human beings. They were not created babies to then grow up. Great whales were also spoken into existence, Genesis 1:20, 21. Grass yielding seed, fruit trees yielding fruit were created.

6. The Bible Refers Elsewhere to the Days of Creation as Being Six Literal Days of the Week.

In the fourth Commandment of the Ten Commandments, God reminded them to remember to keep the seventh day of the week as the Sabbath, Exodus 20:8-11. With His own finger He wrote: Six days shall thou labor, which they understood to be six-days of 24 hours, but He continued: For in six days the Lord made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the seventh day.

7. The Sun Only Divides a Literal Day.

Keeping to the context of Genesis 1, the sun was to rule the day, and to divide the darkness from the light. The sun only divides a literal 24-hour day, not long periods of time!

8. If the Days of Creation Were to be Long Periods of

Time, God Would Have Stated It. There is not a text in the Bible to say that each day of Creation was 7,000 years long. That is only a theory, and like the evolutionary theory to which it is closely related, it cuts across the Bible truth: "For He spoke, and it done; He commanded and it stood fast." Psalm 33:9.

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

9. God Is Not Still Resting.

Practically every reliable translation says God rested and not God proceeded to rest or has been resting as translated in Genesis 2:2, 3 in the New World Bible. It is of interest to note that this Bible has not been consistently translated on this point, because in Hebrews 4:4, when quoting this passage from Genesis 2, it has translated it "God rested"! (It would be wise in taking this study with a Witness to use a number of translations, especially the American Standard Version which has been printed and distributed by the Watchtower Society. The Witness can then see that the New World Bible is a biased translation on this teaching.)

10. The Events Of The Sixth Day.

There is no problem with all these events taking place in a 24 hour period. The animals could all have been spoken into existence by early on the morning of the Sixth Day. Adam could have been created by mid-morning. Then the animals could have walked to Adam to be named by him in a few hours. (Less than the time it takes to walk around the average Zoo.) By mid-afternoon Adam's request for a mate could have been dealt with, and Eve created long before the evening of the seventh-day, which was made for them. Mark 2:27, 28. The Sabbath, which God then rested on, blessed and sanctified, was then set aside for their holy use as a blessing to them each week, after six literal days of toiling in the Garden.

11. When a Day in the Bible Has a Numeral in Front of It, It is Always Referring to a Literal Day of 24 Hours.

Whenever a day has a numeral in front of it in the Bible, such as first day, or fortieth day, it never means any period other than a twenty-four hour day. In a concordance there are scores of references to day but there is never any exception to this rule.

Each day of Creation in the account of Genesis 1, plainly states it was the first day, the second day, third day etc. Besides this, as already mentioned each day was also stated to be the evening and the morning. God in leaving us an account of His work of Creation could hardly have taken more care to ensure that there would never be any mistake about the fact that each day of Creation was a period of just twenty-four hours! Most Christian people believe that Jesus Christ died on a cross which had a crossbeam. However, the Watchtower Society teaches that it was only a simple pole, which it terms a torture stake, and this term is used throughout their publications.

B. Watchtower Quotes

The first part of Genesis indicates that the earth could have existed for **billions of years** before the first Genesis "day," though it does not say for how long. However, it does describe what earth's condition was just before that first day" began: "Now the earth proved to be formless and waste and there was darkness upon the surface of the watery deep; and God's active force was moving to and fro over the surface of the waters."-Genesis 1:2. **[Evolution Or Creation, Watchtower Society,1985, Page 26]**

A well-known geologist said this about the Genesis creation account: "If I as a geologist were called upon to explain briefly our modern ideas of the origin of the earth and the development of life on it to a simple, pastoral people, such as the tribes to whom the Book of Genesis was addressed, I could hardly do better than follow rather closely much of the language of the first chapter of Genesis." This geologist, **Wallace Pratt, [Theistic Evolutionist]** also noted that the order of events-from the origin of the oceans, to the emergence of land, to the appearance of marine life, and then to birds and mammals-is essentially the sequence of the principal **divisions of geologic time.** **[Evolution Or Creation, Watchtower Society,1985, Page 36]**

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

Creation of the heavens and the earth, and the preparation of the earth for human habitation (Genesis 1:1-2 to 2:5). Reaching back evidently through **billions of years of time**, Genesis opens with impressive simplicity: "In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth." Significantly, this opening sentence identifies God as the Creator and his material creation as the heavens and the earth. In majestic, well-chosen words, the first chapter continues on to give a general account of the creative work relative to the earth. This is accomplished in six time periods called days, each beginning with an evening, when the creative work for that period is undefined, and ending in the brightness of a morning, as the glory of the creative work becomes clearly manifest. *[All Scripture Inspired, Watchtower Society, 1990, Page 14]*

The planet's coming into existence is recounted in the Bible with the simple statement: "In the beginning God created the heavens and the Earth." (Genesis 1:1) Just how long ago the starry heavens and the earth were created is not stated in the Bible. Therefore, there is no basis for Bible scholars to take issue with scientific calculations of the age of earth's rock-mass. Scientists variously estimate the age of the rocks as **three and a half to four thousand million or more years**. *[Aid To Bible Understanding, Watchtower Society, Page 476]*

Was all physical creation accomplished in just six days sometime within the past 6,000 to 10,000 years? The facts disagree with such a conclusion: (1) Light from the Andromeda nebula can be seen on a clear night in the northern hemisphere. It takes about 2,000,000 years for that light to reach the earth, indicating that the universe must be at least millions of years old. (2) End products of radioactive decay in rocks in the earth testify that some rock formations have been undisturbed for **billions of years**. *[Reasoning From The Scriptures, Watchtower Society, 1989, Page 88]*

32. The Cross Or Torture Stake

Most Christians would argue that it does not matter what Jesus died on, it is the fact He died and shed His blood for our sins that matters. However, for a Jehovah's Witness, the instrument of Christ's death is made to be important because they believe only they have the truth on this event.

THE BIBLE EVIDENCE

The Bible does not state definitely whether it was a cross or a simple stake or pole. However, the evidence does favor the accepted "T" type cross:

a. The Inscription Above Christ's Head.

Matthew 27:37 (NW) Also they posted above his head the charge against him in writing: "This Jesus the King of the Jews." John 19:19, 20 (NW) Pilate wrote a title also and put it on the torture stake. It was written: "Jesus the Nazarene the King of the Jews. Therefore many of the Jews read this title because the place where Jesus was impaled was near the city: and it was written in Hebrew, in Latin, in Greek." It was usual to write on an inscription the name, address and charge against the criminal being crucified. Because Pilate insisted on writing Christ's inscription in three languages, His would have been a very large one. This the Bible states was posted above his head.

This drawing appeared in the Watchtower publication The Harp of God (1927 Edition) before the cross was rejected. However, from this illustration it becomes obvious that Christ's inscription could only have been posted above his head if the arms were outstretched on a crossbeam. On a simple stake, an inscription placed above the head could be dislodged by the victim flexing his arms. If it had been just a simple stake or pole, the inscription would have had to have been nailed above his upraised hands or body and not what the inspired Bible writer wrote: above his head! (The illustration is from, The Harp of God, page 114.)

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

b. Peter's Death.

Jesus in foretelling Peter's death, said to Him: John 21:18, 19 (NW) "When you have grown old you will stretch out your hands and another man will gird you and bear you where you do not wish. This he said to signify by what kind of death he would glorify God." Christ Jesus foretold that Peter's death would be one involving his hands being outstretched, which would have been death on a cross with a cross-beam. Tradition states this prophecy was fulfilled about AD 67 when Peter was crucified. It is said that because Peter had denied his Lord, he felt unworthy to be crucified exactly like Jesus and requested to be crucified upside down, which request was granted. In the 16th century, Justus Lipsius in his book *De Cruce Liber Primus* gave many illustrations of different types of crosses and methods of crucifixion. The two illustrations from his book, (on the right) show how Peter could have been crucified. There is no real historical evidence to doubt the fulfillment of Christ's prophecy nor the traditional account of the details of Peter's crucifixion.

c. A Cross of Shame.

The Bible pictures the type of death that Christ died as being one of tremendous shame. Philippians 2:8 indicates it was the lowest to which He could humble Himself. Galatians 5:11 outlines it was an offence or stumbling block. If the "T" cross was considered more pagan and degrading than the simple stake, is it not logical that this is the one the Bible writers were referring to when they kept emphasizing the degradation and shame connected with the instrument of Christ's death and torture? Thus the Bible evidence related to Christ's death supports the so-called pagan cross with a cross-beam and not just the simple pole or "torture stake".

d. More than one nail was used on Jesus' hands

John 20:25 "The other disciples therefore said unto him, We have seen the Lord. But he said unto them, Except I shall see in his hands the print of the nails, and put my finger into the print of the nails, and thrust my hand into his side, I will not believe."

A torture stake would only need one nail through both hands rather than a separate nail for each hand.

HISTORICAL EVIDENCE

The PATIBULUM (Cross-beam) and EARLY HISTORIANS. Historians state that when the Romans crucified slaves on a "T" cross it was customary for them to be forced to carry the horizontal cross-beam called a Patibulum to the place of execution. So common was this that Roman authors even used Patibulum synonymously with Crux. The Biblical Quarterly, Volume 13, Number 4, October 1951, on page 442 gives as an example: Seneca, *De Vita Beata* 193, Epiktola 101:12 and Tacitus, *Historiae* 4, 3. This volume also mentions that Irenaeus (second century A.D.) speaks of Jesus' cross as having a cross-beam, and the Epistle of Barnabus 10, 8 which was written earlier speaks of the cross as having the shape of a Greek TAU ("T").

ARCHAEOLOGICAL EVIDENCE

a. Skeletal Remains of a Man Who had Died by Crucifixion.

In 1968 during road construction, just north of Jerusalem, a bulldozer exposed an ancient cemetery at Giv'at HaMitar. Here Israeli archaeologists unearthed the skeleton of a man Yehohanan (John) son of Chagqoi, who had been crucified between the age of 24 and 28, about the same time as Christ. From the book *Buried History* Volume 9, Number 2, (June 1973) pages 38,39, (Australian Institute of Archaeology): "The victim was nailed to the cross in a sitting position, both his legs slung sideways, with the nail penetrating the sides of both feet just below the heels.. The knees were doubled in a semi-flexed position... the trunk was contorted and the arms stretched out each apparently stabbed with a nail in the forearm ... the arm bones were scratched around the nails, by Yehohanan's writings, some two inches above the wrist bones .. Scholars in Jerusalem believe that the posture revealed in the anatomical report indicated the usual

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

position for crucifixion used in the city at that time. Since these scholars who carried out the study were Israeli experts, they could not be accused of being biased orthodox Christians supporting a traditional stand." Dr. Siegfried Horn wrote the above article In the Adventist Review Mar. 2, 1972. This Illustration was of the crucifixion of Yehohanan.

b. Drawings in the Catacombs.

In the previously quoted book, Buried History, on pages 40 and 41, it makes the statement that although "the early Christians shrank from all representation of the Passion, a score of crosses can be collected from the graffiti of the catacombs." It goes on to state that, "In one or two rare catacomb inscriptions, the cross, in the form of a capital T, seems to be inserted in the midst of a martyr's name. The graffiti below comes from the Palace of the Caesars in Rome. The author of this kit viewed it in a Museum on the Palatine Hill, in the Forum in Rome in 1983. It is a mockery of a Christian worshipping a crucified ass, and is labeled: Alexamenos worships his God

This early graffiti reveals the fact that the crucifixion was a cross of the traditional form, and not just a stake as now contended by the Watchtower Society. The popular World Book Dictionary uses an illustration of this drawing, to illustrate the word graffiti. It also appears in Buried History, Volume 9, Number 2, page 41. For further information see, Ancient Times Volume 5 Number 3, March 1961, page 12, of (Australian Institute of Archaeology).

THE CROSS IN THE HISTORY OF THE WATCHTOWER

For many years the Watchtower Society wrote and sang about the Cross of Christ and as late as the time of Judge Rutherford, it was still depicted in the Society's publications as a "T" cross. When "new light" came to the Society on this subject, it began to teach that Christ had not been nailed to the widely accepted cross with a cross-beam. This type of cross it now taught, was associated with paganism, and the sun-god. It was also said to be associated with the phallic symbol of life. This teaching was designed to claim for itself purity of doctrine, and at the same time isolate itself from other Christians. It made the publications, churches, hymns and worship of such Christians abhorrent to the Witnesses, since it centered around them glorying or boasting (see Galatians 6:14) in such a repugnant pagan cross.

WATCHTOWER'S CHALLENGE FAILS

The article torture stake in the Appendix of The Kingdom interlinear Translation ends with this prophetic challenge: "The passing of time and further archeological discoveries will be certain to prove its correctness. Even now the burden rests upon all to prove that Jesus died on more than a simple stake." However, when these words were being prepared for publication in the Interlinear (1968-1969), the bulldozer laid bare the skeleton of a man who had been crucified on such a cross, and this took place about the time of Christ's life! (See opposite page). It would seem that Jehovah God took up the challenge immediately to reveal the truth on the subject of the type of cross Christ was crucified on.

THE WATCHTOWER'S HISTORICAL SUPPORT

a. Justus Lipsius.

In Watchtower publications such as The New World Translation of the Christian Greek Scriptures, (1950) page 770, and The Kingdom Interlinear Translation of the Greek Scriptures, (1969), page 1156, an illustration of the Crux Simplex (Stake) is reproduced from the writings of the Roman Catholic scholar, Justus Lipsius of the 16th Century, to support the Watchtower Society's case. On page 1155 of The Kingdom Interlinear, the statement is made: "Jesus was crucified on a crux simplex."

However, nowhere in the book, De Cruce Liber Primus, does Justus Lipsius say that Jesus was impaled on a crux simplex! On the contrary, he outlines that Jesus was crucified on a cross with a cross-beam and this accompanying illustration was depicted! Many sincere Jehovah's Witnesses are deeply shocked to learn these facts. Justus Lipsius' book gave many illustrations of methods of crucifixion, and most of them, had cross-beams.

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

Summary:

The evidence of:

- a. The Bible.
- b. History.
- c. Archaeology.

Does not support the Watchtower Society's Position! The scholarship of the Society on the subject of the torture stake- reveals either ignorance, dishonesty or both! The cross of Jesus Christ is neither to be revered nor is it to be repudiated. Readers are urged to be careful that while they are contending over the method of Christ's crucifixion, that they are not missing out on a personal relationship with the One who was crucified, and the benefits of this most wonderful outworking of Divine love! After having made these claims for nearly 20 and 40 years respectively, the new editions of Watchtower publications have attest deleted them!

33. Vaccinations And Blood Transfusions

In 1935 the Watchtower Society taught that Vaccination was a direct violation of the law of Jehovah God. Many sincere Witnesses, especially children, died as a result. Within twenty years the Society admitted that this prohibition was without scriptural support, and vaccinations were then allowed. However, by this time, the Society was teaching it was a violation of the law of Jehovah God to have a blood transfusion, and many Witnesses have since died as a result of this doctrine.

VACCINATIONS

The Watchtower law which forbade them:

"As vaccination is a direct in of animal matter in the blood stream, vaccination is a direct violation of the law of Jehovah God." The Golden Age, page 465. April 24, 1935.

The Watchtower admission which allowed them:

Is vaccination a violation of God's law forbidding the taking of blood into the system? C., North Carolina.

The matter of vaccination is one for the individual that has to face it to decide for himself. Each individual has to take the consequences for whatever position and action he takes toward a case of compulsory vaccination, doing so according to his own conscience and his appreciation of what is for good health and the interests of advancing God's work. And our Society cannot afford

Most certainly it cannot reasonably or scripturally be argued and proved that, by being vaccinated, the inoculated person is either eating or drinking blood and consuming it as food or receiving a blood transfusion. Vaccination does not bear any relationship to or any likeness to the intermarriage of angelic "sons of God" with the daughters of men, as described in Genesis 6:14. Neither can it be put in the same class as described at Leviticus 18: 23, 24 which forbids the mingling of humans with animals. It has nothing to do with sex relations. Hence all objection to vaccination on Scriptural grounds seems to be lacking" - The Watchtower, 1952, page 764.

Results of this Watchtower teaching:

Many Witnesses and especially their children died as a result of this irresponsible teaching. One woman I met had migrated from Scotland to New Zealand, where she and her husband became Jehovah's Witnesses. As such they refused to have their son vaccinated against diphtheria, and at the time of commencing school he contracted this disease and died. The husband grieving over the loss of their only child along with his work and witnessing commitments, developed a stomach ulcer. One night the ulcer hemorrhaged with a massive blood loss. He refused what would have been a life-saving blood transfusion, and died. Shortly after his death the grief-stricken widow, only in her early forties, suffered a stroke, and was left permanently paralyzed. This whole tragic chain of events was set off by the Watchtower Society's irresponsible misinterpretation of scripture. When the Society finally admitted they had made a mistake and

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

allowed vaccinations, it was too late for this family and many others like it, who had implicitly believed in the Watchtower Society as a spokesman for Jehovah God. (This story is in Witness Volume 3, Number 3, 1977, by E. B. Price.)

WHY DID THE WATCHTOWER CHANGE ITS ATTITUDES

Many believe it was because the Society's leadership found they could not visit international conventions in foreign countries unless they were vaccinated. A. H. MacMillan, one of the Society's outstanding leaders, gives a clue in his book, Faith On The March, Page 188-189:

"One of the more serious problems I had to deal with, as I remember, was vaccinations. An order was received from the health department in Washington for all the inmates and guards to be vaccinated. Some of our boys in one prison in particular considered this the same as blood transfusion and refused to submit. This caused considerable trouble. Then the order came from Washington to put all the men who refused to be vaccinated in solitary confinement. This did not change our men. The prison authorities hesitated to be overly strict about it; still they had their orders from headquarters. Well, during the excitement I arrived on my regular visit. Now the matter was put up to me to advise our men. Our discussion lasted about two hours, then the men decided to submit to vaccination after making a token resistance. Furthermore they agreed to write a letter of apology for the trouble they had caused through their first stand taken."

The story of the Watchtower Society and Vaccinations is an incredible one! The above is just one chapter in the saga. Behind it is untold suffering and tragedy, yet those who made the laws, were the first to break them when it suited them. On the other hand those who believed the Society and refused to have a vaccination were considered by the leadership such as A. H. MacMillan as being trouble makers and were encouraged to write a letter of apology! How can one trust such an organization?

BLOOD TRANSFUSIONS

The second infamous chapter of the Watchtower Society, which has cost the lives of many of its faithful "foot-step followers", is that concerning blood transfusions. Like vaccinations, it is also dependent upon the Society's interpretation of scripture, which, as has already been observed, leaves much to be desired.

"NOT TO EAT BLOOD"

The Watchtower Society's prohibition against blood transfusions is dependent upon the interpretation of the Biblical command, not to eat blood.

Man's original diet given to him in Eden was a meatless diet. However after the Flood, God told man he could eat of everything that moved on the face of the earth (this obviously did not include man), but that they were not to eat the blood. Moses later elaborated on the types of flesh they could eat for food, but they were not allowed to eat the blood of this flesh, nor were they, allowed to eat anything strangled. Leviticus 17:13-15. (Note that verse 13 qualifies the flesh under discussion as beast or fowl).

In the early Christian church when these laws were under discussion, it was decided that the Gentiles joining the church should also abstain from things strangled and from blood. Acts 15:20, 29.

The above Biblical injunctions are those the Watchtower Society interprets to prohibit a person receiving a blood transfusion. Is this another of its misinterpretation of scripture?

"TO EAT"

The Concise Oxford Dictionary, defines eat thus: Masticate & swallow. This definition is exactly that which is understood by most people today, and also what was understood in Bible times. It leads to a well defined metabolic process, which is entirely destructive as regards the food itself, as it is acted upon by various chemicals within the body. This action entirely breaks it up and converts it into a form in which it

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

can be absorbed into the body. What is not absorbed is excreted. There is no way in which a blood transfusion can honestly be said to be eaten by the body. By contrast the transfused blood mixes with that of the patient and supplements it, without being in any way altered itself!

TWO DIFFERENT PROCESSES

One wonders how an organization such as the Watchtower Society, which professes to take the commands of the Bible literally, could stumble over such a simple instruction: not to eat blood! It is tragic to realize this misinterpretation of scripture has caused so much suffering and death.

WHAT KIND OF BLOOD WAS NOT TO BE EATEN?

Human blood is never mentioned in this connection!

OF BEASTS AND FOWLS ONLY

Genesis 9:34. The every moving thing of the KJV is rendered every moving animal in the N.W. All would agree that the context does not allow flesh or blood in this Biblical passage to refer to human flesh or blood. Leviticus 17:13-15. This passage qualifies the flesh and blood under discussion as beast and fowl.

Verse 11. Mentions concerning the blood that:

... the soul of the flesh is in the blood..

... the blood that makes an atonement by the soul in it.

This is true of a beast or fowl that has been killed, but it does not apply to a blood transfusion, because the donor did not die.

Acts 15:20, 29. The context of the blood they were to abstain from along with the things strangled, were the above beast and fowl. It did not even include fish as Jesus and the early disciples ate fish that had been caught in nets, which meant they had been strangled, and certainly not bled! The Watchtower Society understands this, and does not forbid its people to eat fish such as herrings or sardines. To try and introduce the thought that humans and human blood was included is too ridiculous for further discussion!

EATING MEAT AND BLOOD!

The Watchtower Society is very inconsistent on the subject of eating blood. Many sincere Witnesses have died rather than have a drop of blood transfused into their veins. Yet those same people ate gallons of blood in the meat they consumed every year! Authorities state that only about half the blood of an animal is removed by bleeding:

Even with effective bleeding only about 50 per cent of the total blood is removed. Meat Science, (19 74) pages 132-133, by R.A. Lawrie, Ph.D., D.Sc., F.R.S.E., F.F.S.T. In the five animal about 7 per cent of the body weight is represented by blood, but only about half of this blood can be removed by bleeding. Aspects of Meat Inspection, (19 73) Chapter2. by Horace Thornton, B. V.Sc., D. V.11., F.R.S.H.

Strict Jews who have followed the command not to eat blood eat Kosher meat. The animal is specially killed to expel] the maximum blood from the body, then the meat is soaked in brine and the blood is wrung out. Seventh-day Adventists recommend to their people to return to the original diet of the Creator, which was a completely meatless and thus bloodless one. They produce excellent tasty meat substitutes, and a delicious bloodless gravy.

BLOOD SUBSTITUTES

As yet no adequate blood substitute has been found to do the work of the red blood cells which carry the vital oxygen from the lungs to all the cells of the body, especially the brain. A. D. Farr, F.I.M.L.T., in God, Blood and Society, outlines on pages 35-36, some of the blood "substitutes" used on

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

Witnesses, and shows some could be carcinogenic, and others have adverse side-effects, such as prolonged bleeding time for the patient and allergic reactions. However, these "substitutes" are still inadequate when there has been a massive blood loss. Without a blood transfusion, in such a case, the patient will die.

WHAT OF THE FUTURE?

Like Vaccinations, the scriptural evidence against blood transfusions as "lacking". However the Society has gone too far to alter now, although If It did change this teaching, all would accept it with joy. The only way the Society can save face, As If a satisfactory blood substitute could be found to phase blood transfusions out. Perhaps the dangers of diseases like Aids may help to speed up such research. The Watchtower Society discourages its members from supporting any charities other than its own organization.

34. Giving To Charities

WHY THE SOCIETY ONLY GIVES TO ITS OWN

1. Its Biblical Interpretation. In Matthew 25:31-45, Jesus gives a picture of the Judgment, when all will be asked how they fed the hungry, clothed the naked, visited the sick and those in prison etc. However verse 40 (NW) says: "To the extent that YOU did it to one of the least of these my brothers, YOU did it to me." The my brothers is interpreted to mean those who Christ would claim as "brothers", that is Jehovah's Witnesses. So this is the scriptural basis of why the Witnesses believe they need to only help their own. Matthew 5:46-47, however condemns this attitude of only loving, greeting, helping etc. one's own. There is the parable of the Good Samaritan, which outlines that one even helps those of different ethnic and religious groups.

2. Denigrating Charities. In its magazines the Society takes every opportunity to publicize any mismanagement of charities. Each Index has a list of such articles listed under Contributions, charitable organizations:

3. Stating that Preaching is More Important than Giving. This attitude of the Watchtower Society is summed up at the conclusion of an article which appeared in the Awake magazine, January 22, 1966, on page 4: "The preaching of the good news of God's kingdom may be said to be the most deserving of all philanthropies."

4. Giving to Charities, Would Assist the Work of the Devil. This is possibly the strongest reason why Witnesses feel they should not assist organizations other than their own. It is strange however, that they feel it is alright to receive assistance from these same "organizations of the Devil", when they are in need. The following story is an example in case:

WITNESS MISSIONARY SAVED BY ADVENTISTS

Seventh-day Adventists were the first to commence work in the Wabag Valley, Papua New Guinea. Other missions followed and eventually Tom and Rowena Kitto arrived to establish the work of Jehovah's Witnesses in the area.

In 1964, Pastor Len Barnard pioneered Adventist aviation in New Guinea. Sometime afterwards, Tom Kitto rolled his car over the side of a mountain, and was unable to find adequate help until he went to the Adventist hospital at Sopas, near Wabag, where the Adventist doctor, Dr. Charles Hammond discovered he needed urgent brain surgery. The only hospital able to perform this delicate operation was at Goroka, over 200 miles away.

Tom's problem was now transportation, as no airline would carry a man in his critical condition, especially as a plane would have to fly over a mountain range which towered up to 15,000 feet, to reach Goroka. The Adventist doctor radioed Tom Kitto's plight to Pastor Len Barnard. He immediately altered his busy schedule, and offered to fly to Wabag and pick up Tom. By flying a circuitous route along the highland valleys, he was able to circumnavigate the high mountain ranges to avoid what would have meant to Tom fatal variations of air pressures.

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

By the time, the Adventist mission plane touched down at the Goroka airport on its mission of mercy, Len had radioed for an ambulance, notified the hospital, and had everything in readiness. The operation was a success. Torn Kitto was reunited with his wife Rowena, and they gave many more years of service to the Watchtower Society. Their story is in the 1078 Yearbook, pages 66-67. Each year throughout Australia, Seventh-day Adventists call on the public for financial help to run such hospitals as the one at Sopas, and also to make mercy flights such as the one that saved Tom Kitto's life. Most people in the public respond happily, with one outstanding exception, our friends the Jehovah's Witnesses!

THE GOLDEN RULE & THE WATCHTOWER SOCIETY

This attitude of the Watchtower Society is one that is certainly not supported by scripture. Many people in the public who do not profess to be Christians, but know the Golden Rule, are appalled by the stand that Jehovah's Witnesses are led to take by the Watchtower Society.

OUR TASK

To try and show these sincere people (many of whom are otherwise very generous), that as the Watchtower Society has made many mistakes in the past, and many misinterpretations of scripture, that they should have another look at this question of giving. In the instructions of Christ, and the Bible writers, they will find a true Christian gives to alleviate pain and suffering, irrespective of who the sufferer might be. Jesus, our Example even said: Love Your Enemies.. Do Good to Them that Hate You!

Pastor Lan Barnard inspecting preparations for another mercy flight by the Adventist mission plane, "Andrew Stewart". It was in this plane that he flew Tom Kitto, the pioneer missionary of the Jehovah's Witnesses, from the Sopas Adventist hospital in Wabag, to Goroka, PNG, for specialized surgery which saved Tom's life. However, Jehovah's Witnesses, while happy to receive such assistance, feel it would be wrong to support such a program!

35. Birthdays, Christmas, Mother's Days

Birthdays, Christmas, Mother's Days etc were commemorated by the Watchtower Society during the first fifty years of its history, as times of praise and thanksgiving to God. Since 1928 this has all been discarded.

The reasons why the Society celebrated Christmas for so many years is given in the 1925 Manna book reading for December 25. (See Figure 1.) Most Christians would still believe that this was a balanced and sane approach. Their attitude to Birthdays and Mother's Day was likewise. Those old Bible Students were a happy loving group, who found such occasions proved a blessing to them. But then it all changed:

"At our early conventions, between sessions, as the friends were chatting together," writes Anna E. Zimmerman, "you might have seen some friends handing you their 'Manna' book (Daily Heavenly Manna for the Household of Faith), asking to please write your name and address in their 'Manna.' You would write it on the blank page opposite the date of your birthday, and when your birthday came around and they read their text that morning for the day they might decide to write you a card or letter, wishing you a happy birthday."

Yes, in those earlier days, dedicated Christians commemorated birthdays. Well, then, why not celebrate the supposed birthday of Jesus? This they also did for many years. In Pastor Russell's day, Christmas was celebrated at the old Bible House in Allegheny, Pennsylvania. Ora Sullivan Wakefield recalls Brother Russell gave members at the Bible House five or ten-dollar gold pieces at Christmas. Mabel P. M. Philbrick remarks: "A custom that certainly would not be carried on today was the celebration of Christmas with a Christmas tree in the Bethel dining room. Brother Russell's usual 'Good morning, all' was changed to 'Merry Christmas, all.' What caused the Bible Students to stop celebrating Christmas? Richard H. Barber gave this answer: "I was asked to give an hour talk over a [radio] hookup on the subject of Christmas. It was given December 12, 1928, and published in The Golden Age, number 241 and again a year later in number 268. That talk pointed out the pagan origin of Christmas. After that, the brothers at Bethel never celebrated Christmas again!"

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

“Did we mind putting those pagan things away?” asks Charles John Brandlein. “Absolutely not. This was just complying with new things learned, and we had never known before they were pagan. It was just like taking a soiled garment off and throwing it away.” Next, birthday celebrations and Mother's day were discarded—more creature worship. Sister Lillian Kamrude recalls: “How readily the brothers all dropped these holidays and admitted they were glad to be free. New truths always make us happy and we felt we were privileged to know things that others were ignorant about.” 1975 yearbook, Page 147.

Pastor C.T. Russell, the founder of the Watchtower Society, along with all the heavenly class at that time, all celebrated Christmas, Birthdays, Mother's Days etc... It is believed that when they died they went to heaven to rule in the heavens and direct the Society on earth. Pastor Russell's birthday was recorded in the 1925 Manna:

DECEMBER is .

Fear not: for, behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy, which shall be to all people. For unto you is born this day in the city of David a Savior, which is Christ the Lord. Luke 2:10, 11.

Although we cannot agree that this is the proper day for celebrating the birth of our dear Redeemer, but must insist that it was about October first (Millennial Dawn, Volume 2, Page 54), nevertheless since he did not intimate his desire that we should celebrate his birthday. It is quite immaterial upon what day that event of so great importance to all, is celebrated. Upon this day, so generally celebrated, we may properly enough join with all whose hearts are in the attitude of love and appreciation toward God and toward the Savior. The habit of giving little remembrance another at this time of year seems to us especially appropriate. God is the giver of every perfect gift. He is continually giving and we are continually receiving from him; but amongst all his gifts the one of greatest importance to us is the gift of his Son to be our Redeemer.”

DAILY
Heavenly Manna for the Household of Faith
SCRIPTURE TEXTS
from
THE WATCH TOWER
A Birthday Record
1925

IS IT EVIL TO CELEBRATE BIRTHDAYS, MOTHER'S DAY, ETC?

There are no texts in the Bible, either commanding or forbidding such celebrations. What is forbidden, are evil practices concerning such occasions. The deciding factor is how they are celebrated. See Romans 14:5-6.

Practices can not be forbidden merely because the pagans do them. Pagans have weddings and from them came the wedding ring custom. However, the Watchtower Society allows its members to perform weddings and have wedding rings. They would argue that there is nothing evil about such celebrations. Why then do they not take the same attitude to Birthdays?

Mother's Days and Father's Day are even harder for them to condemn, because the Bible commands us to honor our fathers and our mothers. To say this is creature worship and thus evil is neither scriptural or sane. If the Society is anxious to discard all that is pagan, then why do they use the pagan names for the days and months of the year, commence the day at midnight instead of at sunset as outlined in the Bible? Why are their major meetings all held on the day dedicated by the pagans to the Sun god etc? One soon realizes as they examine this subject that the Society is very inconsistent, and often without Biblical support for its attitudes of what is evil.

36. Appendix

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

WATCH TOWER PUBLICATIONS DEALING WITH BETH-SARIM

1931 Year Book, 36-37

The Golden Age, March 19, 1930, 405-407

The Watch Tower, April 1, 1930, 111

The Messenger, July 25, 1931, 6-8

The Messenger, July 30, 1931, 2

The Watch Tower, August 1, 1931, 239

The Watchtower, March 15, 1937, 86

The Golden Age, May 5, 1937, 499

Salvation (1939), 311-12

The Watchtower, June 1, 1940, 162

Consolation, April 30, 1941, 14

Consolation, November 26, 1941, 17-18

Consolation, May 27, 1942, 3-16

The New World (1942), 104-05

1943 Yearbook, 33-34

The Watchtower, December 15, 1947, 382

Jehovah's Witnesses in the Divine Purpose (1959), 252-253

"Let Your Name Be Sanctified," (1961), 335-336

1975 Yearbook (1974), 193-194

Jehovah's Witnesses-Proclaimers of God's Kingdom (1993), 76, 89

The Golden Age, September 2, 1931, 800

The Watchtower, February 1, 1933, 34

The Watchtower, December 15, 1937, 370

The Watchtower, October 15, 1943, 317

The Watchtower, November 1, 1955, 655

The Watchtower, June 1, 1985, 27

The Watchtower, March 1, 1992, 27

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

JEHOVAH'S WITNESSES 1931 YEAR BOOK

During the year loving hands provided a comfortable house pleasantly situated at San Diego, California, wherein the president and his office assistants can escape the rigors of the winter and there be enabled to go on with the work. This provision is graciously acknowledged as from the Lord. He knows who are the givers, and will bless them accordingly. The title to that house is in the Society, and is held in trust for the perpetual use of God's faithful ones. It was thought appropriate to give a name to the house, and henceforth it will be known by the name "Beth-Sarim". This is a compound Hebrew word, and its meaning is "house of the princes", and is intended for the princes mentioned by the Lord. It is confidently expected that in God's due time some of the faithful men mentioned in Hebrews 11, and whom Christ shall "make princes in all the earth", will find an abode in that house while carrying on the work the Lord will give them to do. The house is a small matter, but it reminds us that there is a direct and close relationship between all the creatures that are truly devoted to God. Some blessed day all of God's creation who are faithful will be gathered together into one family under Christ his beloved One. (Ephesians 1:10) To what extent the Lord will use the houses his people have built on earth in the past few years is for him to decide, of course.

We are always glad, however, to believe, according to his Word, that he is pleased to have his people recognize the close relationship between all that love God.

The enemy gave wide publication of and concerning the building of that house at San Diego. The purpose of the enemy, of course, was to bring reproach upon the work of the Society. Others have given friendly mention of the house through the public press. The publication which has spread over the earth has served to let the people know that there are some on Earth who have full faith and confidence in God and his promises, and see that his kingdom is at hand, and that in his kingdom he will have faithful men on earth to represent him. The mere amount of publication could not have been bought for five times the cost of the house. This is another evidence of the fact that the enemy often overreaches himself and never succeeds in accomplishing a real purpose. In the days of the early church the apostle wrote: "Some indeed preach Christ even of envy and strife, and some also of good will: the one preach Christ of contention, not sincerely, supposing to add affliction to my bonds." (Philippians 1:15, 16) It is even so today. The campaign of education goes grandly on. *Jehovah's Witnesses 1931 Year Book (1930), Pages 36, 37.*

THE GOLDEN AGE, MARCH 1930

The Truth About the San Diego House

By B. J. Martin

In view of the fact that there are so many slanderous reports circulated about Brother Rutherford, the real purpose of which is to injure the Lord's work, I feel disposed to give the facts concerning some of them, not for the benefit of the slanderers, but for the benefit of those who are really loyal to the Lord.

SOCIETIES BUILDINGS: During the past ten years the Society, under the business management of Brother Rutherford, has financed on a business basis and erected for the benefit of the work the following buildings:

The Bethel Home, furnishing commodious quarters for the workers there.

The Brooklyn factory, with a capacity of 20,000 volumes a day, in one of the best appointed and lighted factories in the world.

A factory and home for the work in Switzerland.

A factory and home for the work and workers in Magdeburg, Germany.

A home for the workers in Czechoslovakia.

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

Prior to this period the Society rented its headquarters in most of the places, including London. In the last few years the Society has acquired title to the London Bethel. The Society has also built offices and a printing plant at Toronto, Canada.

To my personal knowledge Brother Rutherford has been untiring in his efforts to get all this housing and equipment for the benefit of the Lord's work.

As is well known by the brethren, he and others were confined in prison during the War because of faithfulness to the Lord's cause. Following his release he had a severe case of pneumonia, and since then has had only one good lung. It is almost impossible for him to remain in Brooklyn in the winter season and get on with the arduous duties that he has to perform. To my personal knowledge there is no man in America that does more real hard work daily than he. Four years ago he went to San Diego, California, under the treatment of Doctor Eckols. The climate is so superior to that of almost any other place that Doctor Eckols has repeatedly urged him to spend as much time as possible in San Diego. When he goes he takes with him his office force and works early and late, and except for the work he has done the factories would not be able to operate and it is hardly probable that we could have been operating the radio stations.

It is not always convenient to get a comfortable place to live when it is necessary to rent a house for a few months. For the past two years I and other brethren close to Brother Rutherford have urged upon him the necessity of a house in San Diego where he can live and do the work that is so necessary to be done. Last year, in company with a few other brethren, we pressed this matter upon him, at that time the Lord having provided the means for the building of the house so that it would not be a burden on the Society. He finally consented that the house might be built only upon condition that it should be exclusively for the use of the Lord's work, henceforth and for ever and not for any private gain for any one. In October, 1929, I went to California and acquired the title, to the ground in my name and entered into a contract with the builder, and the house was constructed in my name. I again went to California at the beginning of the year 1930 to close up the building arrangements. I am happy to have any part in this because I know what it means for the Lord's work.

I feel sure that the Lord loves Brother Rutherford as much as he loved David. David built a house for himself and afterwards thought about building one for the Lord. After repeated urging by loyal brethren the San Diego home was built, but Brother Rutherford refused to have it for himself except to use it for the Lord's work. A deed was made conveying the title to the house. This deed was written by Brother Rutherford himself. I am certain there is no other deed to any piece of property like it under the sun. I am grateful to the Lord that I had anything to do with it. The deed is a matter of public record on the deed records of San Diego, California, and therefore I am at full liberty to publish it and I do here submit the deed for publication so that all may see and understand how much Brother Rutherford has been libeled and slandered by those who would injure the Lord's work.

I am certain that the loyal ones would have been glad to help finance the house had opportunity been given, and that they will rejoice when they know that this property will be for ever for the Lord's people; that when Brother Rutherford is through with it somebody else in the Lord's work will have it, and when David and Joseph or some of the other ancient worthies return they will have it.

The enemy charges that the house cost \$100,000. Of course it did not cost one-fourth that amount; but their falsification in this behalf is in keeping with their false statements about everything else. See the statement from the treasurer of the Society that not one penny of the Society's money was drawn out to pay for this house.

TO WHOM IT MAY CONCERN:

This is to testify that no money has been drawn from the funds of the Watch Tower Bible & Tract Society, or any affiliated association, by R. J. Martin, Brooklyn, New York, or anyone else to be used for the purpose of erecting, purchasing or acquiring the possession of any building or real estate in San Diego, California.

March 3, 1930

Respectfully submitted,

[Treasurer's seal]

W. E. VAN AMBURGH, Treasurer.

I append a copy of the deed, including the notarial acknowledgments and recorder's memoranda on the back, all of which will be of interest to many readers of The Golden Age, I feel sure.

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

DEED

ROBERT J. MARTIN a single and unmarried person of 117 Adams St. Brooklyn, New York, for and in consideration of the sum of Ten Dollars (\$10.00) does hereby grant bargain and sell unto

JOSEPH F. RUTHERFORD

of 124 Columbia Heights, Brooklyn, New York for and during his life on earth and thereafter to the WATCH TOWER BIBLE AND TRACT SOCIETY, a corporation created and organized under the laws of the State of Pennsylvania and maintaining its chief operating offices at 124 Columbia Heights, Brooklyn, New York and for the purposes hereinafter set forth.

All that real property situated in Kensington Heights, County of San Diego, State of California bounded and described as follows, to wit:

Lot One Hundred Ten (110) and Lot One Hundred Eleven (111) of Kensington Heights, Unit No. 2, in the County of San Diego, State of California, according to map thereof No. 1912, filed in the office of the County Recorder of said San Diego County, May 24, 1926.

TO HAVE AND TO HOLD THE ABOVE GRANTED AND DESCRIBED PREMISES unto him, the said JOSEPH F. RUTHERFORD for his exclusive possession, use and benefit for and during his life on earth and at the end of said limited estate then to the WATCH TOWER BIBLE AND TRACT SOCIETY in trust to be used for the purposes herein set forth, to wit:

The grantor at the request of the said JOSEPH F. RUTHERFORD who is President of the WATCH TOWER BIBLE AND TRACT SOCIETY and General Manager thereof makes this provision and condition as set forth in this deed:

Both the grantor and the grantee, the said JOSEPH F. RUTHERFORD are fully persuaded from the Bible testimony, which is the Word of Jehovah God, and from extraneous evidence that God's kingdom is now in course of establishment and that it will result beneficially to the peoples of earth. That the governing power and authority will be invisible to men but that kingdom of God will have visible representatives on the earth who will have charge of the affairs of the nations under the supervision of the invisible ruler Christ. That among those who will thus be the faithful representatives and visible governors of the world will be David, who was once king over Israel; and Gideon, and Barak, and Samson, and Jephthae, and Joseph, formerly the ruler of Egypt, and Samuel the prophet and other faithful men who were named with approval in the Bible at Hebrews the eleventh chapter. The condition herein is that the said WATCH TOWER BIBLE AND TRACT SOCIETY shall hold said title perpetually in trust for the use of any or all of the men above named as representatives of God's kingdom on earth and that such men shall have possession and use of said property hereinabove described as they may deem for the best interest for the work in which they are engaged.

This property has been acquired and the improvements built thereon at the instance and under the direction of the said JOSEPH F. RUTHERFORD and dedicated to Jehovah God and to His King Christ who is the rightful ruler of the earth and for the express purpose of being used by those who are servants of Jehovah God. For this reason the provision is made in this deed that the property shall be for ever used for that purpose subject to any encumbrances that may have been placed thereupon.

IT IS FURTHER PROVIDED that if the said JOSEPH F. RUTHERFORD while alive on the earth shall by lease, deed or contract provide that any other person or persons connected with the said WATCH TOWER BIBLE AND TRACT SOCIETY shall have the right to reside on said premises until the appearing of David or some of the other men mentioned in the eleventh chapter of Hebrews as above set forth even such person or persons so designated by the said JOSEPH F. RUTHERFORD in such lease or other paper writing shall have the right and privilege of residing on said premises until the same be taken possession of by David or some of the other men herein named and this property and premises being dedicated to Jehovah and the will of his kingdom it shall be used as such for ever. Any persons appearing to take possession of said premises shall first prove and identify themselves to the proper officers of said Society as the person or persons described in Hebrews chapter eleven and in this deed.

IN WITNESS WHEREOF I the said ROBERT J. MARTIN and the said JOSEPH F. RUTHERFORD have hereunto signed our names this 24th day of December A.D. 1929.

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

ROBERT J. MARTIN.

Witnesses:
DONALD HASLETT
BONNIE BOYD

STATE OF NEW YORK, COUNTY OF KINGS

On this 24th day of December A.D. 1929 before me, Donald Haslett a notary public in and for said County and State of New York, having authority to take acknowledgments of legal instruments, personally appeared ROBERT J. MARTIN and JOSEPH F. RUTHERFORD known to me to be the persons whose names are subscribed to the foregoing instrument and each acknowledged to me that he executed the same as his free act and deed.

WITNESS MY HAND and official seal the day and year in this certificate first above written.
DONALD HASLETT, Notary Public. [Notary Seal] State of New York, County of Kings.

I, Fred G. Limmermann, Clerk of the County of Kings and also Clerk of the Supreme Court for said county (said court being a court of record) do hereby certify that Donald Haslett the Notary Public before whom the within acknowledgment or deposition was made was at the time of making the same authorized by the laws of the state of New York to take the acknowledgments and proofs of deeds or conveyances for lands, tenements and hereditaments situate, lying and being in said state of New York. And further that I am well acquainted with the hand writing of such Notary Public, and verily believe that the signature to said certificate of proof, acknowledgment or deposition is genuine.

In testimony whereof I have hereunto set my hand and affixed the seal of said County and Court this 24th day of December, 1929.
Fred G. Limmermann, Clerk.

GRANT DEED
Individual
ROBERT J. MARTIN
to
JOSEPH F. RUTHERFORD
et al
Dated December 24th, 1929

Recorded at the request of Grantee February 7, 1930, at 15 minutes past 2 o'clock in Book Number 1741, Page 69 of Deeds. Records of San Diego County, California. John H. Ferry County Recorder, By N. C. Parsons Deputy. Compared. Fee \$1.80. [*The Golden Age, March 19, 1930, Page 405-407*]

WATCHTOWER, APRIL 1930

DEAR BROTHER RUTHERFORD,

During the question meeting held by the Los Angeles ecclesia on Sunday, February 23, 1930, and over which you presided, the friends were so moved by your answers given to questions asked that at a meeting, directly following they voted with one accord to instruct me to write this letter.

Your answers given to some of the false accusations made against you were so straightforward and open that none actuated by the spirit of the Lord could help but rejoice. We regret that the agents of Satan will stoop so low as to deal in personalities and to malign you, but it was done to the Master when he was here, and all who serve the Lord can but except the same. It is it a mark of your faithfulness. We want you, to feel also that these accusations grieve us as much as they do you; for while made directly against you, yet as all the members form the body of Christ, so also an injury to one member is an injury to all. We want you to feel, in every hour of trial, our love for you and our devotion to the cause for which you are so fiercely and valiantly fighting, and that we are fighting shoulder to shoulder with you. We want you to know that while we rejoice to have the facts concerning tile questions answered there was not one, in the

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

Los Angeles ecclesia who loves the Lord and his kingdom who held any doubts in his heart concerning you.

Your wonderful provisions in the deed to the San Diego property have impressed the friends with your faith in the Lord's promises. It has filled us with a keener realization of the fact that we are living in the time of the establishment of his kingdom. It has stirred our hearts with a desire to show our faithfulness to the Lord in this short remaining time left to us. With this thought in mind some of the friends have suggested that a short article in *The Watchtower*, setting forth the provisions of this deed, would be a source of comfort to all the friends as this information has been to us here. Be assured, dear brother, of our continued prayers in your behalf and of a double portion of our love and that he who is for us is greater than till who are against us. Your brother in Christ, CHARLES G. O'HANLON, Secretary, Los Angeles Ecclesia. [*The Watchtower, April 1, 1930, Page 111*]

WATCHTOWER, AUGUST 1931

MY DEAR BROTHER RUTHERFORD: After reading *Light*, I thought I must let you know how much I have appreciated same; and I thank Jehovah for the wonderful explanation of Revelation that he has given to the remnant at this time. It is a clear indication that the great battle of Armageddon is rapidly approaching, as we see the prophecies which have been fulfilled, particularly since 1914, and others in course of fulfillment.

It is grand to see that many of those prophecies are being fulfilled by the faithful remnant. I count it a glorious privilege to have a share in this stupendous work. Some of the chapters seem to stand out very prominently, especially chapters 8, 9, 11, 13, 20 and 21.

It is thrilling to look forward to the return of the faithful prophets before the last members of the remnant pass beyond. Surely the Lord guided you to having the house built in San Diego in preparation for their return. May he continue to bless you abundantly as you press the battle to the gate.

For your encouragement I would like to tell you that the brethren over here are deeply appreciating *Light* and the opportunity of placing it in the hands of the people. Many of the classes have already commenced to use it as a class study. With much love, Your brother and co-laborer in Zion, ALFRED G. BORLAND, England. [*The Watchtower, August 1, 1931, Page 239*]

WATCHTOWER, MARCH 1937

Those ancient witnesses, specially mentioned by the apostle in Hebrews the eleventh chapter, have not expected to see the feet members of Christ, the Greater-than-Joseph, while in the flesh, but the evidence strongly points to the fact that they will see at least some of them on the earth. The Lord in his loving kindness makes provision, and we may confidently expect that those faithful men of old will be back on the earth before Armageddon ends and while some of the remnant are still on the earth, and that they will unite together in the praise and service of Jehovah God. There is at least one house on earth the title to which is held in trust for the use and benefit of those faithful men. Whether they occupy it or not, this house has been a means of advertising the kingdom throughout the earth and calling to the attention of the people that those faithful men will be back on the earth, and that the Lord will use them as governors or local rulers. It will not be at all difficult to recognize such men, because they will be upstanding and righteous and do righteousness in every way, and will be a joy to those who come in contact and serve with them. The public press has ridiculed and scoffed at BETH-SARIM, but those who love the Lord rejoice that this has been used as a means to publicly call attention to the faithful men whom God will bring forth. [*The Watchtower, March 15, 1937, Page 86*]

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

SALVATION, 1939

At San Diego, California, there is a small piece of land, on which, in the year 1929, there was built a house, which is called and known as Beth-Sarim. The Hebrew words Beth-Sarim mean "House of the Princes"; and the purpose of acquiring that property, and building the house was that there might be some tangible proof that there are those on earth today who fully believe God and Christ Jesus and in His kingdom, and who believe that the faithful men of old will soon be resurrected by the Lord, be back on earth, and take charge of the visible affairs of earth. The title to Beth-Sarim is vested in the WATCH TOWER BIBLE & TRACT SOCIETY in trust, to be used by the president of the Society and his assistants for the present, and thereafter to be for ever at the disposal of the aforementioned princes on the earth. To be sure, everything then on the earth will belong to the Lord, and neither the Lord nor the princes need others to build houses for them; but it was thought well and pleasing to God that the aforementioned house be built as a testimony to the name of Jehovah and showing faith in his announced purposes. The house has served as a testimony to many persons throughout the earth, and while the unbelievers have mocked concerning it and spoken contemptuously of it, yet it stands there as a testimony to Jehovah's name; and if and when the princes do return and some of them occupy the property, such will be a confirmation of the faith and hope that induced the building of Beth-Sarim. [*J. F. Rutherford, Salvation (1939), Page 311*]

WATCHTOWER, JUNE 1940

Some unreliable person is responsible for the circulation of a report that Beth-Sarim is being enlarged as a place of security and that this is being built by the Society. There is absolutely not one word of truth in the report. Those who are interested in the Theocracy would better be circulating the kingdom message rather than false imaginations of others. [*The Watchtower, June 1, 1940, Page 162.*]

CONSOLATION, APRIL 1941

Jehovah's people have a right to proper use of the courts. There are times when they would not be using the spirit of a sound mind to do otherwise. At Beth Sarim, San Diego, Judge Rutherford does much work at night. For some time he was annoyed by a young man flashing a spotlight into his study and blowing his automobile horn. He had him arrested, which was right and proper. The young man got a 30-day suspended In sentence, and will have sense enough to stay away now or get locked up. [*Consolation, April 30, 1941, Page 14*]

CONSOLATION, NOVEMBER 1941

Return of the "Princes"

THE facts that have recently come to pass showing the fulfillment of sacred prophecy conclusively prove that the time for the battle of "that great day of God Almighty" is very near and that in that battle all of God's enemies shall be destroyed and the earth cleared of wickedness, preparatory to the, complete establishment of righteousness for ever.

The affairs of the earth then will be under the complete control of the Messiah, God's Anointed King over His Theocracy; and the faithful men of old, from Abel to John the Baptist, will be resurrected from the dead as perfect creatures and will act as the representatives, on earth of that Theocratic Government. (Hebrews 11:1-40) The Scriptural evidence also abundantly shows that those faithful men will be back on the Earth at the beginning of the final battle of Armageddon. From the Scriptures it appears absolutely certain that some of the faithful "remnant" of Jehovah's anointed witnesses will yet be on the earth when those faithful men appear, and certainly those persons of good-will toward God and who shall compose the "great multitude" of Armageddon survivors will also be on the earth, and all of these will meet and greet earth's new "princes". Concerning God's anointed King of The Theocracy it is written (Psalm 45:16): "Instead of thy fathers [they] shall be thy children, whom thou may make princes in all the earth."

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

In this day of judgment upon the nations many persons are, by reason of the warning being published throughout the earth by Jehovah's witnesses, seeing that Abraham and Isaac and Jacob and other faithful men of old will be the earthly representatives of the invisible, heavenly Theocratic Government of Jehovah God by Christ Jesus the Messiah, and that therefore those faithful men will be in God's kingdom organization. At the same time they see, that the religious Jews, the natural descendants of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob, and their modern day counterparts, the religionists of the present time, will be cast away. The religious practitioners hear the message of warning as it is proclaimed to those of good-will toward God, and they bear the announcement made by the Lord that Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob and all the prophets shall be in the Kingdom organization, and that the religionists are cast out; and that makes them very mad; and, being exceedingly angry, they gnash their teeth against the witnesses of the Lord. In this day of judgment the great Judge, Christ Jesus, says to those hypocrites: "Depart from me, all you workers of iniquity. There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth, when you [who claim to be the spiritual successors of God's covenant people Israel] shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets, in the kingdom of God, and you yourselves thrust out. And they shall come from the east, and from the west, and shall sit down in the kingdom of God." Luke 13: 27-29.

Manifestly that "son of perdition", Judas, who betrayed Jesus Christ, was a type of the "man of sin" company. Just before his death Judas was filled with remorse to such a degree that he went and hanged himself. This may indicate that the "man of sin" class, just before their complete destruction at Armageddon, will realize not only that Abraham, Isaac and Jacob are in the realm of the Kingdom but that those composing the religious "man of sin" have no show whatsoever of being of the Kingdom, and then they will be filled with remorse.

When Abraham was offering up his only, son Isaac as a sacrifice, Abraham pictured Jehovah God, the great Theocrat; Isaac was a type of Christ Jesus, the only-begotten and beloved Son of God; and Jacob, the grandson of Abraham by Isaac was a type or picture of The Christ. Christ Jesus being the Head and the true church being "his body". (See Colossians 1:18.) Thus was The Theocracy prophetically pictured. The persons of good-will, the Lord's "other sheep" who shall form the "great multitude" of Armageddon survivors, now see and appreciate The Theocracy, and such are now coming to God's kingdom, and they are coming from all parts of the earth, and they find refuge, protection, rest and comfort under the organization of Jehovah. The faith exhibited today by these who are not spiritual Israelites often exceeds the faith and zeal for God manifested by those who claim to be Israelites after the spirit and in line for the Kingdom.

Concerning this Jesus said: "Verily I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no, not in Israel. And I say unto You, That many shall come from the east and west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob in the kingdom of heaven. But the children of the kingdom shall be cast out into outer darkness; there shall be weeping, and gnashing of teeth." Matthew 8:10-12.

Today the information is being brought directly to the clergy and to the "evil servant" class, who claim to be Israelites after the spirit and many of whom were, no doubt, once in line for the Kingdom. These are being told that the Kingdom is at hand and that all who support The Theocracy shall find life, and those oppose it shall be destroyed. The "other sheep" of the Lord, hearing this message are coming from all quarters of the Earth and from all walks of life amongst the common people. These now see and appreciate The Theocratic Government. They see that Abraham pictured the Greater Abraham, Jehovah God. That Isaac pictured Christ Jesus, the beloved Son of God. That Jacob pictured The Christ, Head and body; and that such constitutes The Theocratic Government. Seeing this by faith, they hasten to put themselves under The Theocracy, and thus they "sit down" with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, composing the heavenly Theocracy. By the words "sit down" it is shown that they have found rest, protection, ease and comfort and know what God has in reservation for them that love and serve Him. At the same time those once in line for the Kingdom come to a realization that they are cast out and are in "outer darkness", and hence they indulge in howling and wicked persecution of God's people. (Matthew 8:12) Other scriptures show that Abraham, Isaac and Jacob, and all the faithful prophets, resurrected from the dead, will be on earth immediately preceding Armageddon, and the people of good-will who shall form the "great multitude" foretold at Revelation 7:9-17 will be literally associated with those "princes in all the earth". Therefore this scripture (Matthew 8:11 above quoted) is subject to this double meaning.

At San Diego, California, there is a small piece of land, on which, in the year 1929, there was built a house which is called and known as "Beth-Sarim". The Hebrew words Beth Sarim mean "House of the Princes". The purpose of acquiring that property and building the house was that there might be some tangible proof that there are those on earth today who fully believe God and Christ Jesus and in the

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

Theocratic Government, and who believe that the faithful men of old will soon be resurrected by the Lord, be back on earth, and take charge of the visible affairs of earth. The title to Beth-Sarim is vested in the WATCH TOWER BIBLE & TRACT SOCIETY. You may soon meet Abraham, Daniel, and other like faithful men, who shall be here as perfect men acting as governors of the new world. Eagerly seek their instruction and hang on their words of wisdom and grace, because they will lead you in the way of righteousness. They are God's "princes". [*Consolation, Volume 23, Number 579, November 26, 1941, Page 17.*]

CONSOLATION, MAY 1942

San Diego Officials Line Up Against New Earth's Princes
The amazing story of San Diego officials' disgrace
Petition of thousands of San Diego citizens ignored
Consolation, Volume 23, Number 592, May 27, 1942.

“And in His name shall the nations hope.” - Matthew 12:21, ARV.

San Diego Officials Line Up Against New Earth's Princes

BEFORE his death Judge Rutherford made the simple request that his remains be buried somewhere on the hundred-acre estate at San Diego, California, held in trust for the New Earth's Princes. The house built thereon he named "Beth-Sarim". It was deeded to those princes. On March 14, more than two months after he passed to his reward on January 8, the San Diego County Planning Commission handed down the decision that nowhere upon this land could his bones repose.

This was their second denial of a permit for burial, claiming to act under a county ordinance which expressly provides for cemeteries in this area but requires that a conditional permit from the Planning Commission be first obtained. This the commission refused as to two different sites. The action of the Planning Commission was contrary to the county ordinance, allowing cemeteries in this district.

Just how a man's bones, buried without monument or even conspicuous marker, in the center of 100 acres of land, a half mile from the closest outside house, could disturb anyone is left for the commission to explain. The VFW, who petitioned against the granting of the permit, prejudicially explained it this way: "Judge Rutherford, during his lifetime, taught intolerance, and, therefore, as a manifestation of our tolerance, we do not wish him buried."

During the nine weeks from the day of Judge Rutherford's death until the denial of the second petition by the Planning Commission, the WATCHTOWER and its legal agents, who were charged both by the judge's request and by statute to bury his body, made exhaustive efforts to discharge their responsibility, and were blocked at every turn by officials both of the county and of the state, including the state director of public health, the state attorney-general, and even the office of the governor. The record of this whole affair is so outrageous that it is brought to public attention as disclosing the depth of meanness resorted to by religionists to satisfy their vindictiveness even on lifeless bones. It also furnishes a perfect example of those ensnared by religion. They have foolishly thrown away all Worthiness of life merely for the brief satisfaction of spite.

Several years ago, Judge Rutherford assigned to the WATCHTOWER the right for the burial of his remains. In early 1940, and just before the Detroit convention in July, he was attacked by severe illness and afterward recovered sufficiently to continue through that convention, and to make five surpassing speeches to the marvelous St. Louis convention of August, 1941. By November, 1941, the illness had gained ground, and he was compelled to have an operation, in Elkhart, Indiana. It was then that he expressed the desire to get back to California, and he was subsequently brought to Beth-Sarim by train and ambulance.

For some time it had been apparent to all, even the best medical experts, that he could not recover. The judge had yearned to see the ancient witnesses (mentioned in the 11th chapter of Hebrews) return to earth at Beth-Sarim, which place (held by the WATCH TOWER BIBLE & TRACT SOCIETY for these men) by name means, in Hebrew, "House of the Princes." As he thought he might die before that event, he

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

wanted his bones left on the property. These facts are brought out more fully in the statement to the County Planning Commission on January 24, hereinafter set forth.

In order to comply with the law, a cemetery corporation was formed of members of the Beth-Sarim family, and a plot of ground was deeded to this family corporation, about three hundred feet from the residence and so far down the canyon slope as to be invisible from every house on the heights. The corporation was known as Beth-Sarim's Rest, and this small plot bore the same name. This was completed in December, and approximately three weeks later the judge passed on to his higher work. While it had been expected, to those near him and aware of his serious condition, his death was none the less a terrible shock to those who had worked with and loved him for many years.

One, suffering from this great loss on the very day of the death, had the death certificate filled out, and, with the mortician, requested the burial permit. It was then that the county officials delivered their first wallop to an afflicted and bereaved family. No permit would be granted for burial on Beth-Sarim's Rest, even though it was a legal corporation and the death certificate was in order, unless Beth-Sarim's Rest were granted a conditional permit to operate a cemetery in this part of the county.

The district attorney advised that in 1940 an ordinance restricting this area was passed, but allowing cemeteries on conditional permit from the Board of Supervisors. Naturally this information disturbed a family already shaken by death; but due application was made to the Planning Commission, and, after forcing the family to leave the remains in the mortuary for two weeks, the Commission deigned to consider the matter and refused the permit.

Meanwhile the two weeks were an awful nightmare. Judge Rutherford was much hated by the religionists; and when his death was known, the press dug up every lie invented by the clergy for the past twenty years, and smeared their pages with lying malice. As a result a continuous stream of cars thronged the road and sidewalk which dead-ends just beyond the house, and great congestion resulted. The grave had been dug and the cemetery premises were entered by trespassers, and so much damage done that the police and sheriff's office had to be notified, still without abatement of this disturbing nuisance.

Children and their religious parents indulged in jeering epithets as they passed the house, in a manner hitherto unheard of toward a grief-stricken family. It was horrifying indeed to hear shouted to the household from the street: "How long are you going to keep the old boy on ice?" Could anything but the hate of religionists have inspired such conduct! Since this whole affair brought into focus Beth-Sarim, the 'House of the Princes', it would be of interest to here consider its erection and purpose.

Beth-Sarim

The "princes" above referred to are the faithful and true servants of Jehovah, to whom Jehovah gave His promise that they should be the visible governors upon earth, after the King, Christ Jesus, has ousted and destroyed the enemy. "Behold, a king shall reign in righteousness, and princes shall rule in judgment!" (Isaiah 32:1) The book Salvation contains a discussion of these princes (Pages 307-310), and a picture and consideration of the history and purpose of Beth-Sarim (Pages 311-313). The above pages were read to the court in the first hearing on the petition for writ of mandamus. These princes will be the visible representative of the invisible capital organization of Jehovah, which is known as the Kingdom, or THE THEOCRACY. They will no longer be known as the "fathers" but since their life, as well as the life of all others who shall live on earth, proceeds from the King, Christ Jesus, they will henceforth be called "children." "Instead of thy fathers [many were the physical ancestors of Jesus] shall be thy children, whom thou [Christ Jesus] may make princes in all the earth." - Psalm 45:16.

The Watchtower magazine, under the title "Demon Rule Ending", in consideration of the 11th chapter of Daniel, plainly demonstrates that the time for the return of these princes is near. The fact that Daniel's prophecy is now unfolded concerning the identity of "the king of the north" and "the king of the south", which could be understood only at the "time of the end", when Daniel would stand in his lot as one of the earthly governors under The THEOCRATIC GOVERNMENT, indicates that: Daniel and the others will be here "any time now". "I say unto you, That many shall come from the east and west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob in the kingdom of heaven." Here is reference to the happy people that will have these ancient witnesses, resurrected in human perfection, as their visible governors, and THE THEOCRACY, or "kingdom of heaven", over all.

Beth-Sarim, therefore, in 1929, was built as a tangible proof of faith in these prophecies. The Scriptures indicate that there will be a present-day modern meeting between the last of the Christian witnesses of Jehovah with these resurrected princes who were the pre-Christian witnesses of Jehovah. Judge Rutherford, for the Society, accepted the house from one who loved the Lord and who awaited the

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

early return of the princes, to be held in trust for them. The house was not built with Society's funds, but by the giver of the property. The deed from this man to Judge Rutherford for the Society was widely publicized by the public press and scoffed at and ridiculed by them.

It is recalled in passing that for many years Noah was scoffed at while he laboriously constructed the ark at the commandment of the Most High. The conditions then pictured the present era of scoffers. The last jeer then was cut off by the icy waters of the Flood, picturing the impending battle of Armageddon, which will sweep away all laughter and life itself from those who have mocked God's purposes.

Judge Rutherford's Winter Workshop

For twelve winters Judge Rutherford and his office force occupied Beth-Sarim. It was not a place of ease or vacationing, but was used as a winter workshop; the books from Vindication, Book One, down to and including Children were written there, as well as many Watchtower articles and booklets. The executive instructions for branches all over the earth also were transmitted from Beth-Sarim during the judge's presence there. It was indeed a "work house", as all can testify who watched him pour on, his faithful devotion to the commission from Jehovah. Revelation 2:10.

At Beth-Sarim, Judge Rutherford completed the 1942 Yearbook material as his last work before his death. He dictated this material from his dying bed. For more than forty years he had left a nation-wide political career with the Democratic Party and devoted his life to the Lord as a Christian.

For just two days over a quarter of a century he had served as president of the WATCHTOWER. During that time he suffered imprisonment, vilification and personal abuse such as has been heaped upon few since the days of the apostles. On the other hand, he had the unspeakable privilege of putting nearly 400,000,000 books and booklets in the hands of the people, feeding them on the Lord's Word, the Bible. Compare,

"He said unto him the third time, Simon, son of Jonas, love thou me? Peter was grieved because he said unto him the third time, Love thou me? And he said unto him, Lord thou knowest all things; thou knowest that I love you. Jesus said unto him, Feed my sheep." - John 21:17.

Certainly Judge Rutherford received the crown of life as a spirit creature; for Jehovah is "the faithful God, which keeps covenant and mercy". (Deuteronomy 7:9. text in the 1942 Yearbook for January 8, the day of his death) "We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye." Corinthians 15:51, 52; Revelation 2:10; 2 Timothy 4:8.

Judge Rutherford was familiar with the fact that those men of old, Jacob and Joseph asked for their burial at the place of the interment of Abraham. (Genesis 50:13) The body of Joseph was embalmed and remained in Egypt for many years and because he had commanded it before his death, the Israelites carried his bones with them when Moses led them from Egypt, and buried them in Shechem more than a hundred years later. (Exodus 13:19; Joshua 24:32). Moses' successor, Joshua, was buried on the border of his inheritance (Joshua 24:30) "Gideon the son of Joash died in a good old age, and was buried in the tombs of Joash his father." (Judges 8:32) The Scriptures abound with other burial requests which were respected. Ruth 1:17, 2 Samuel 19:37; 2 Chronicles 16:14.

Judge Rutherford looked for the early triumph of "the King of the East", Christ Jesus, now leading the host of heaven, and he desired to be buried at dawn facing the rising sun, in an isolated part of the ground which would be administered by the princes, who should return from their graves. Even his burial request was a token of faith.

First Location Denied by Commission

Between the time of his death and the first public hearing before the Planning Commission sixteen days later, the enemy had busied themselves to get 259 property Owners, a few of them neighbors to Beth-Sarim, to sign a petition opposing the burial of the judge's body on the site selected! The location first plotted for the small cemetery, which cemetery, it was claimed by the enemy, the law required even for a single burial, was on a knoll about three hundred feet from the house, almost a hundred feet below in the canyon and entirely, invisible from every house in Kensington Heights.

Most of those who signed the petition of protest against the burial were induced to do so by the falsehood that a cemetery for thousands of Jehovah's witnesses was proposed. Many of these regretted signing and admitted being misled and all the immediate neighbors either signed a second petition favoring the burial or refused to further aid the opposition.

Even at this first hearing a petition was presented on which the Board of Supervisors gave the official count of 1,070 names of persons favoring. During this entire affair Jehovah's witnesses got

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

petitions bearing the names of 14,693 people of good-will in the county of San Diego and officials of the County Commission and Board of Supervisors, and other officials, received more than letters favoring the application for burial. During the various hearings (in all there were three appearances before the Planning Commission and three before the Board of Supervisors) the malicious attacks upon the memory of a dead man, and upon the living Jehovah's witnesses, disclosed a religious prejudice which could emanate from only one institution on earth, i.e., the Roman Catholic Hierarchy. The assaults fell heavy upon those who felt keenly the ignominy of being unable to bury their dead.

Be it said to their credit that both the San Diego Tribune-Sun of January 24 and the San Diego Union of the 25th gave unbiased reports of this hearing. The report of the Union is quoted in full:

COUNTY PLANNERS DENY RUTHERFORD BURIAL PLEA

"But the Lord counts m done unto himself anything done against His servants or even the bones of His servants." With that admonition ringing in their ears, San Diego county planning commissioners yesterday denied the dying wish of a servant of Jehovah, and recommended against granting a permit to bury Judge Joseph Franklin Rutherford on a lemon and orange tree studded knoll adjacent to his Kensington Heights residence.

World leader of Jehovah's witnesses, the 72-year old Judge died January 8 in Beth-Sarim, the 4440 Braeburn Road residence he maintained for the men who died faithful to Jehovah in Israel's days and who he believed would return.

Against the admonition, voiced by W. P. Heath Junior, vice president of Beth-Sarim's Rest, a corporation organized to operate a non-profit cemetery association, the commission weighed the written and verbal protests of individuals and organizations who fought the Permit application.

"I move we deny the request," said William L. Baskerville, commission secretary.

"Second the motion," said Commissioner O. B. Wetzell, of El Cajon. The vote was unanimous and will be conveyed to the county supervisors, who must take the final action, in the form of a recommendation.

Heath indicated he will plead his case before that body and will argue, as yesterday, that:

1. He, and his associates want a permit to bury only one person, Judge Rutherford, and that no monument would be placed or erected, and that only a grave marker would be a stone beneath an oak tree surrounded by orange and lemon trees.

2. That the hillside plot, isolated and inaccessible, never would have appearance of a cemetery.

3. That neither individuals nor the values of their property could be affected adversely by granting the permit.

"I believe in religious freedom and I also believe in the laws of my country," said James C. Henderson, of 4373 Middlesex Drive, one of the most outspoken of the protestants.

"But this organization refuses to salute our flag," he shouted. "Its members won't fight against totalitarianism. They won't fight for liberty. When dealing with an organization like that, how can we feel we can trust them when they say they will bury only one person there! They have beliefs which go beyond our Constitution; beyond our flag."

Loses Composure

For 90 minutes the commission listened to the arguments, heard soft-spoken Heath, who lost his composure only once when he was overcome with emotion while reading his argument, faltered, and was forced to stop for several moments.

"The house called Beth-Sarim was built by Judge Rutherford as a monument of his faith in The Theocracy," he explained. "The Theocracy is another name for the Kingdom of God, for which all Christians have been taught to pray."

"After its completion, Beth-Sarim was held in trust for the visible representatives of The Theocracy. These men will shortly be resurrected and made the official governors, or princes of the earth.

"They are specifically mentioned in the 11th Chapter of Hebrews. Among them are included Abraham. Isaac, Jacob, Joshua and Gideon, all of whom died faithful to Jehovah in the days of ancient Israel.

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

Respected By LORD

"It is remarked in passing that many of these men requested that their bodies be buried in specific places and the Lord respected their requests."

"Heath explained too that Rutherford's desire to be buried at sunrise was for the reason that Christ Jesus, the Theocratic King is spoken of as the King of the East, and the Chief King of the Sun Rising. Many Scriptures show that the glory of Jehovah is symbolized by the sun and sun rising. One day the sun rose for the last time, on a faithful Servant of Jehovah."

"Judge Rutherford can never be hurt again but the Lord counts as done unto himself anything done against his servants or even their bones.

SQUARELY UP TO BOARD

"The matter is squarely tip to this board. Will they grant a request that can hurt no one, or will they block, at the instance of misinformed individuals, the last wish of the servant of Jehovah? That responsibility is upon you, and an one of the Jehovah's witnesses I have discharged mine before you..

Byron Gilchrist, Kensington-Talmadge Men's Club president, summarized the opposition's arguments in the following letter:

"This club, composed of property owners and residents of the Kensington-Talmadge area, desires to go on record with your honorable body an being strenuously opposed to the granting of a permit to any or all individuals, organizations or associations who seek or may seek to create a Cemetery zone or a burial ground, either private or public, in the Kensington-Talmadge, area.

FEAR LOSS IN VALUE

"It is felt that a cemetery or burial ground so close to that fine residential district of beautiful homes would decrease property values, retard sales and have a depressing effect on present residents of the area.

"It in further thought that the granting of such a permit would establish a precedent which might be of unknown magnitude and that like burial grounds could be created at any point in the county."

Protests also included a petition signed by 259 Kensington Heights property owners, and a letter from a bank which is trustee for the W. W. Whitney estate, whose beneficiaries include the Associated Charities, Helping Hand Home, Salvation Army, San Diego Children's Home, San Diego Humane Society, San Diego Museum Association, San Diego Society of Natural History, the YMCA and YWCA. Virtually all those organizations filed individual protests.

SIGNED BY 1000

Heath submitted a petition signed by 1000 persons who favored the application, and introduced A. L. Jacobs, who m the next-door neighbor of the judge said, "If he wanted to be buried them, that's the place to put him."

"Are you a member of Jehovah's Witnesses?" asked Gilchrist.

"I am not," was Jacobs' emphatic reply. "I'm not even in sympathy with it."

Councilman Ernest Bond and Harry Foster, both residents of the district, also argued against the application. Rutherford's body is in a San Diego mortuary.

The Board of Supervisors, in total disregard of the urgency of the matter, delayed action until February 2. Meanwhile the representatives of the Society were forced to make an extensive trip to Sacramento and San Francisco to see state officials because of the unreliable information purposely given by the local district attorney's office. The Board of Supervisors, after nine days' deliberation, likewise denied the application.

Petition Denied for Second Site

On the same day a request was again made of the local registrar, Dr. Alexander Lesem, for a permit to bury on a spot a half mile from the closest house in the county. There was no health hazard and no law forbidding, but he refused, because the district attorney's office told him to refuse. It was realized that legal rights had been trampled on, and as the Society's representatives had no other adequate remedy, a petition for writ of mandate (mandamus) was brought in the County Superior Court, to force Dr. Lesem or Recorder Howe to issue the permit,

This hearing brought out some very interesting points concerning burials and cemeteries in the state of California, including an incredible mix-up of conflicting laws and ambiguous definitions. Just what

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

the legislators really meant to allow or prohibit is pretty much of a mystery. However, California Supreme Court decisions throw some light on the subject: (1) burials in the county are legal even when not in cemeteries; (2) the court looks with disfavor on all sorts of zoning restrictions in remote parts of the county; (3) the wishes of the deceased, if such "can be ascertained" are binding upon those charged to carry out his burial.

Legal counsel for the WATCHTOWER, and who was complimented by the presiding judge for his competent handling of the law and argument, ably represented the interests of the Society, and finished an eloquent plea with these words:

Jesus was the most hated man that ever lived on earth, but, after He was killed by hanging on a tree, the authorities permitted that His body be buried on private property. (Matthew 27:60) But Judge Rutherford, whose record as a champion of American liberties and freedom of worship, whose briefs on these subjects, followed in several decisions by the Supreme Court of the United States, Place him in the highest rank of lawyers in this land, and who, above all, was a faithful servant of the Moot High God, cannot even be buried. I respectfully ask that the petition for writ of mandate be granted so that his bones may be properly buried.

The judge decided to continue the case so that the new site could be brought before the Planning Commission, and application for a cemetery made thereon, thus indicating that the second plot was a proper place for burial and if the application was refused the petition for writ of mandate could be amended to correct the matter on order of court. The Planning Commission, who deliberated for more than two weeks, investigating the site, was haled before the court, and denied the second application for a cemetery.

Prejudice in Its Ugliest Form

Certain of the facts regarding this second application and its denial, March 14, disclose how prejudice in its ugliest form was whipped up against the petitioners. New location for interment was in almost the center of the property known as Beth-Shan, which is roughly 75 acres of canyon and mesa land, adjoining Beth-Sarim but separated by a half width of canyon.

This property, also belonging to Watch-Tower, has one small and one large dwelling upon it and a few outhouses, and consists of some fruit trees and other cultivated patches in aggregate about seven acres, and about 65 acres of unreclaimed brush, either too steep, or rocky, or inaccessible for development. It offers retreat for all forms of animal life common to this portion of southern California, such as coyotes bobcats (lynxes), rabbits, Blue Mountain quail, doves, and songsters of many varieties, all of which die and are buried without fuss under the leaves Of the cactus and greasewood. Judge Rutherford, in a discussion before his death, had said that as a second choice he wished to be buried somewhere on these wild acres.

In order that all the objections made in regard to the first site near to Kensington Heights might be removed in regard to this new site, it was requested that only a ten-foot-square cemetery be granted. The spot was also inaccessible except by private road a half mile long and closed by a gate. Dr. Alexander Lesem looked at the site himself and declared that there was no health hazard. (He also stated that there was no health hazard in the first site.) However, Jehovah's witnesses realized all pressure would be exerted by the Hierarchy operating from Rome in an effort to reproach the Lord's name and strike at even the bones they hated; so a petition was circulated among the people of goodwill, and in less than three weeks 13,623 names were signed. (Adding the first 1,070, this makes 14,693 names of persons petitioning the various county officials to grant the request; all ignored by them.)

Heart Of Flint

The preliminary hearing on this second petition was held on February 28, and it was pointed out to the commission that this change of location had been made to satisfy all reasonable objections of anybody; but if the commission denied the petition because they hated the servant of the Lord, such a course would bring serious and disastrous results on them. It was especially emphasized that the enemies of the Lord should not be lamented nor buried, but should lie as dung upon the ground, and that it is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God". - Jeremiah 25:33; 2 Kings 9:37; Hebrews 10:31.

They appeared to listen attentively, heard Several of Jehovah's witnesses and others express themselves in favor, allowed the opposition to let out a few yelps, which were more subdued when it was asked that the chairman put them under oath, then decided to postpone the decision for two weeks while they visited the site. They visited the site, declared the beautification of the grounds to their liking, then denied the petition without further hearing.

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

This latter denial occurred March 14, as has been stated above. On March 5 there appeared in article in the Tribune-Sun that the San Diego Council of the Veterans of Foreign Wars sent a communication to the Planning Commission which terminated as follows:

"Now therefore San Diego County Council, v. p. w., recommends disapproval of any request to establish a burial plot for Mr. Rutherford other than at a bona fide cemetery."

"Harold Angier post 383, American Legion, also went on record as being opposed to the burial in other than an established and recognized cemetery."

It thus appeared that the American Legion and the V.F.W. are at their old work of serving the Hierarchy, and this time they have the temerity to interfere in the proper burial of the servant of the Most High. It would be a dangerous thing to interfere with anybody's burial, when Jehovah has said, 'bust thou art, and unto dust shall thou return.' (Genesis 3:19) Only agents of the Hierarchy, whose pope Martin V commanded the remains of the Bible translator John Wycliffe be dug up, forty-four years after his death, and burned and the ashes thrown into the river Swift, could stoop to anything so despicable.

Earth's Meanest Organization

About this time evidently the heat and pressure from the Hierarchy got a bit too strong for the Union and the Tribute Sun, which had handled the matter rather fairly theretofore. When a letter was written to the editor of both Papers (the two are combined) stating that the witnesses of Jehovah were in truth and in fact patriotic and concerned in the welfare of the people of the country, whereas the Legion and the VFAV serve the religious power that is allied with America's enemies, namely, the Roman Catholic Hierarchy; the editor replied that the newspaper was "not interested in any way in the religious phase of the controversy". No doubt the part of the letter which called attention to the treachery of the priests in the Philippine Islands which assisted their capture by the Jape, and to the pope's line-up with Catholic Hitler, Mussolini and Franco, was a bit too shocking to his religious susceptibilities. It was also pointed out that Judge Rutherford had disclosed this link between the Axis powers and the Roman Catholic Hierarchy, and, in doing so, had rendered America and England a patriotic service.

The letter in answer to Edward T. Austin, editor-in-chief of the San Diego Union and Tribune-Sun, contains the following paragraph:

"Be assured that I wrote that answer to the lying charges [of the V.F.W.] in order to discharge my responsibility before God and before men, that you would have opportunity to right a wrong if you wished to. Since you do not, that ill your misfortune. It does not in any way absolve you from responsibility for bearing false witness against the Lord's servants, nor relieve you of any of the blame for the iniquitous acts of them which way be taken as a result. 'A false witness shall perish?' (Proverbs 21:28) 'He that justifies the wicked, and he that condemns the just, even they both are abomination to the Lord.' (Proverbs 17:15) Respectfully, one of Jehovah's witnesses, [signed] W. P. HEATH, Junior.

The Planning Commission convened again, having in the meantime inspected the premises with many flattering comments as to its beauty. Jehovah's Witnesses also were in attendance at the meeting room to the number of about 150. With the utmost lack of courtesy the commission kept this audience waiting for restatement of the facts for two hours and a half while they allied with zoning regulations destined to take the living from poor farmers and residents in many parts of the county. After this unnecessary wait, during which half of the people could not even be seated, the august commission announced that nothing more would be heard about this burial site and in the space of about a minute and a half they called for a vote and denied the application forthwith. Heath then asked for permission to be heard, and this was granted with poor grace. They accepted the additional 4,500 petition signers, but did not turn them over to the Board of Supervisors at all. Asking the further leave to refute the charges made against Jehovah's witnesses in a recommendation by the VFW above described, this was met with refusal. Major McCauley said these words: "Our patience is at a limit; we cannot spend any time with this; we are too busy with defense work; although to the personal knowledge of 150 witnesses had not been mentioned all day. The audience was dismissed without further ado.

Second Court Hearing

The second application, above scribed, before the Planning Commission and the Board of Supervisors had been made at the sole suggestion of Judge Mundo, at the conclusion of the first hearing. After the denial of the second site by the commission and the board, they also were named in an amended petition for Writ of Mandate, and commended to appear before Judge Mundo for final hearing. This

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

petition therefore included the registrar, the recorder, the Planning Commission and the Board, of Supervisors, both individually and officially.

Twelve weeks had now elapsed during which Jehovah's Witnesses had gotten the usual run-around from the buck-passing county officials. The case was set to begin April 1. Court opened with a restatement of the facts here to fore considered and the purpose of the plaintiff corporation, Knorr, and Heath to obtain relief and their just rights. The second hearing was drawn out eight days, due to the fabrications of the defendants. The facts and motives behind the conduct of the various county, officials opposing the burial were soon to have an airing that will interest all.

None of these dignitaries ever appeared in court, however. Their defense was undertaken by the district attorney's office, with results which will be demonstrated progressively. On the first day of the trial Judge Mundo ruled that the unreasonable action of these boards could not be questioned but only the law itself might be attacked on constitutional grounds. Much evidence regarding the prejudice revealed above was thus kept out of the court record.

Deewall The Expert

Fighting against the Lord, however, may not be kept secret. "For there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed; neither hid, that shall not be known." (Luke 12: 2) An insignificant member of the district attorney's office, whose name escapes our memory at present, who had previously engineered the opposition, represented the county officials at the hearing. He chose to use the Planning Commission engineer, one Deewall, as a witness, who unwittingly gave a rather good cross section of the conduct, prejudice and mentality of his superiors, the district attorney and deputy, the Board of Supervisors and the Planning Commission. During two days of cross examination he revealed the following information as an expert!

According to his opinion there were no cemeteries needed in this sparsely settled area, and in the future, when a cemetery did become necessary because of the increased population in the district, if permitted it would be too close to houses and would therefore be objectionable. This statement was made in behalf of the Planning Commission in spite of the fact that the ordinance specifically provided for cemeteries in the district.

Should Prominent Men Be Massacred?

After it was shown that no monuments would be erected, and that indeed the site would be completely invisible to anyone on the outside, Deewall continued to object that the fact of one grave there would disturb the super susceptibilities of himself, the Planning Commission, and others, twenty years hence.

He testified further to the fact that the chief requisite of a cemetery was natural barriers; and this location had exactly such barriers, but the difficulty here was that Judge Rutherford, the one to be buried here, was prominent. Conclusion: Prominent men should not be buried. Along about this point Mr. Deewall considered himself in rather hot water. He sought safer territory.

All other objections being eliminated he maintained that view lots across the canyon from the spot, several hundred feet away, would be seriously reduced in value by this invisible grave. When confronted with the known fact that the most valuable lots in the exclusive Kensington Heights area overlooked the Old Spanish Mission in the San Diego river valley, where many graves are in plain view of everybody, in explaining the difference which made those graves unobjectionable, and even raised the value of the property, Deewall said: "The remains of those buried at the Old Mission were massacred"; thus holding, in behalf of the Planning Commission, that whether a grave was objectionable or not depended on the manner in which the person met his death.

The moral here seems to be that one has to be massacred in order to be buried without objection from the Planning Commission and their stooges. This remarkable conclusion was reached in spite of the fact that the Board of Supervisors and the Planning Commission allow, by ordinance, cemeteries and burials without limitation in the adjoining zone, in the county, and, as far as we have been able to ascertain does not insist that the people be massacred, prominently or otherwise.

Mr. Deewall admitted that the defendant Lesem, county health officer, stated that there was no health hazard from the proposed burial, but, nevertheless, insisted that superstitious persons might be affected.

Consecrated Grave versus Open Sewer

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

All zoning laws derive their validity from the police power of the officials to protect the health, morals and general welfare of the people. In this regard Mr. Deewall was never able to explain how this concealed grave would be a detriment to the community while the officials maintained an open sewer within full view of the grave, over the long-standing protest of the plaintiffs, Heath and WATCHTOWER. In other words, the statement of Jesus, “[They] strain at a gnat, and swallow a camel” (Matthew 23:24), can be paraphrased to describe properly the Board of Supervisors, the Planning Commission, and Deewall thus: “They strain at a single grave and swallow a sewer creek!”

Limited space prevents quoting all the “wisdom” of Deewall as handed down from the witness stand. He spent several days of agony on the stand trying to explain these ridiculous conclusions. He became so accustomed and in the habit of making evasive explanations that the habit continued with him when asked leading questions by his own counsel. The deputy district attorney would reframe his question several times, and each time he would get a different answer from the witness. The court was treated to one of the most farcical exhibitions in side-stepping and buck passing by the witness that is seen outside of a football field.

The Board of Supervisors and the County Planning Commission called as their chief support an insignificant city councilman, claiming to reside in Kensington Heights, who based his entire testimony on admitted prejudice against Jehovah's witnesses and who became so angered at the truth that the judge had to rebuke him for his uncouth language, used in open court.

The San Diego city planning engineer Mr. Rick, summed up their real position as follows: If it were an ordinary man there could be no objection to this burial.

The undisputed facts showed that plaintiffs Heath, Knorr and WATCHTOWER were entitled to have the permit for the burial of Judge Rutherford issued as requested.

The Board of Supervisors and County Planning Commission questioned the validity of the trust in the deed covering the property where the proposed burial was to take place. The plaintiffs hold the property in trust for the ancient witnesses of Jehovah God described in Hebrews 11, Who died in faith of THE THEOCRACY and whom Jehovah has promised to resurrect and bring back to earth as the visible governors of all people under The THEOCRATIC GOVERNMENT. The Planning Commission and Board of Supervisors contended that the property could be conveyed and subdivided. Under the law and the deed it cannot. It therefore became necessary to show that the deed contained a reasonable and legal trust.

The plaintiff William P. Heath, Junior, one of the creators of the trust in question, testified as a witness and explained to the court that the trust was for real men and was altogether reasonable and certain of performance. In this connection he told the court, among other things, as follows:

Awaiting New Earth's Princes

Jesus bought all the obedient of mankind, including those who will be the princes. (Romans 5:12; 6:23; 1 Corinthians 15:22) At present these men, who died long ago, are in “hell”, which means the grave. Jesus testified to the fact that no one had ascended to heaven before His resurrection and therefore the conclusion is inescapable that these men are resting in death. Explaining their certainty of resurrection Jesus showed that when God told Moses that He was the God of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob He was not the God of the dead but the God of these men who would receive the promise of life in due time. Psalm 89:48; John 3: 13; Acts 2: 34 Matthew 11:11; 22:31, 32; Exodus 3:4-6.

A “prince” is a sovereign ruler appointed by and acting under the direct command of the supreme or higher powers. Jehovah and Christ Jesus are the Higher Powers. (Romans 13:1) The chief ruler amongst men appointed by Jehovah is a “prince”.-Book Children, pages 180-181; Genesis 32:28; 1 Kings 14:7.

The faithful acts of the men who were known as “fathers in Israel” are recounted in the eleventh chapter of Hebrews. Genesis 12:1-3; 28:13, 14; Acts 7:2-5.

As previously pointed out these men will receive their life as all other human creatures through the King Christ Jesus; therefore it is written, “Instead of thy fathers shall be thy children, whom thou may make princes in all the earth.” (Psalm 45: 16) “Behold, a king (Christ Jesus) shall reign in righteousness, and princes [Abraham and the others] shall rule in judgment.” (Isaiah 32: 1) The Lord further declares. “I have purposed it, I will also do it,” (Isaiah 46:11); and, ‘My word shall not return unto me void.’ (Isaiah 55:11) Therefore we have it upon the highest authority, the Word of God, that these men shall be resurrected as princes. We know that they will be.

These men will be the visible representatives of The THEOCRACY, which is the government created and built up by the Almighty God as His capital organization and which shall rule the world. Further proof that these princes will shortly take office upon earth as perfect men is found in the prophecy

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

of Daniel. "But go thou thy way till the end be; for thou shall rest, and stand in thy lot at the end of the days." (Daniel 12:13) Daniel's "lot" is that of these princes. Proof is now submitted that we are now living at "the end of the days", and we may expect to see Daniel and the other mentioned princes any day now!

"The End of the World" Is Now

"The end of the days" is also spoken of in the Bible as "the end of the world". When Jesus was asked by His disciples He answered that such would come or be evidenced by nation rising against nation, famines and pestilence, such as are now prevalent in Europe and elsewhere. He counseled as follows: "When ye, therefore, shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place . . . then let them which be in Judea, flee into the mountains." - Matthew 24:15, 16.

Jesus therefore said in cryptic phrase that the end of Satan's uninterrupted rule of the nations of the earth today would be marked by wars and calamities and the rising of a "desolating abomination". This abomination refers to the totalitarian combine bent on destroying the earth and all that dwell therein. Those who saw these conditions were admonished to flee to THE THEOCRACY, pictured by "the mountains".

It was of this same Theocracy that Daniel wrote, at the Lord's dictation, 'And in the days of these totalitarian kings shall the Lord God of heaven set up His kingdom, THE THEOCRACY, which shall consume all these wicked ruling powers, and it shall stand for ever.' (Daniel 2:44) This proves beyond any doubt that the Axis powers are doomed to everlasting destruction-Psalm 92:7.

To those who do not agree with or understand the provision in this deed for the returning princes such may seem ridiculous, but the court is reminded that Noah also was ridiculed for building the ark as a testimony to his faith in the Lord's promise to destroy wickedness by the Flood. During the years the ark was undergoing construction faithful Noah was constantly jeered at by the religionists. He was not deterred thereby, and he received the Lord's protection while his tormentors perished.

An exactly parallel condition exists today. Armageddon will sweep away all those who laugh now at the Lord's purposes and particularly at the provisions contained in these deeds. These events will not occur in the distant future as some claim but very shortly. Jesus said, 'When the totalitarians are destroying the earth, and conditions like that in Nosh's day exist, it is evidence that the full setting up of THE THEOCRACY is at hand. This event will take place during the lifetime of the generation which now witnesses this fulfillment of prophecy.' (Luke 21:31, 32) 'The Lord owns the earth and the fullness thereof,' and He provided for the remains of those who died to return to the dust of the ground. (Psalm 104:29; Genesis 3: 19) It is therefore dangerous to prevent the bodies of the Lord's servant from coming to their proper rest

Princes Promised Earthly Resurrection

As early as 1920 Judge Rutherford pointed out that the ancient witnesses or princes were promised an earthly resurrection by the Lord. In that year he delivered a public address at Los Angeles, California, entitled "Millions Now Living Will Never Die", in which he called attention to the expectation of the return of the men above mentioned. All the publications since emphasize the same fact.

It therefore appears that the return of the princes is a fundamental teaching of the Scriptures. It is as certain as the truth of God's Word. Judge Rutherford gave much of his life in endeavoring to bring this vital matter to the people's attention. What, then, could be more fitting and appropriate before God and before men than that his bones should rest on the land held in trust for the men whose coming he was privileged to announce. For this reason a strenuous effort has been made to comply with unreasonable human laws, that the demands of the state be met and the Lord's servant be granted his last wish.

Reasonable regulations regarding the burial of the dead are necessary in a civilized land and with such Jehovah's witnesses have no argument; but where unreasonable, contradictory and absurd regulations are set up for the sole purpose of fighting the Most High, such is a dangerous course for officials to pursue, and public attention is called to the fact for the benefit of all.

In this connection it is worth noting that Joseph died and was embalmed and his remains left in a coffin on top of the ground in Egypt. Because he had commanded before his death the Israelites carried bodies with them on their long trek to the Promised Land. More than a hundred years elapsed between Joseph's death and his burial in Shechem. Genesis 50:26; Exodus 13:19; Joshua 24:32; Hebrews 11:22.

Objections Were All Eliminated

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

While on the witness stand Mr. Heath also testified that he desired to eliminate any possible objection to a burial in the district; he said no markers and no monuments would be erected, and there would be no pilgrimages; he desired only to bury the bones as his friend wished done.

During the delivery of Heath's testimony, Judge Mundo interrupted to ask two questions. The first was: The WATCHTOWER maintains several homes. HOW will these governors know how to go to San Diego, instead of to Brooklyn, or somewhere else?

To this the judge was answered: The Almighty God, who made the heavens and the earth, who has power of life and death, and who can resurrect by "creating at any spot on earth, taking note of the faith of His servants in dedicating these places to their return, we are assured He would send them to the place prepared for them. Furthermore, if He desired to resurrect them at some other place he would have the power to direct them or transport them there. He has almighty power and His hand is not shortened.

Then the judge asked: Suppose the Japanese were to level that property off during an air raid, what would happen then?

The answer: We submit, your honor, that we trust in the Lord for protection.

There are many instances in the Bible where His servants, the Israelites, were powerless to meet the foe and the Lord fought their battles in their behalf; such as the cases of Barak and Deborah against Sisera (Judges 4: 15) at the destruction of the Egyptians in the Red sea Exodus 14, 15); Jehosaphat (2 Chronicles 20); Gideon (Judges 7); and Joshua (Joshua 6:27): and time would fail me to mention them all.

It appears that the enemy to cast reproach upon the Lord and His servant by preventing his proper burial. Let the commission and the supervisors consider and compare their action with what God's Word foretells concerning the treatment of Jehovah's witnesses by His enemies, to wit: "And their dead bodies shall lie in the street of the great city, which spiritually is called Sodom and Egypt, where also our Lord was crucified. And they of the people and kingdoms and tongues and nations shall see their dead bodies three days and an half, and shall NOT SUFFER THEIR DEAD BODIES TO BE PUT IN GRAVES. And they that dwell upon the earth shall rejoice over them, and make merry, and shall send gifts one to another: because, these two prophets tormented them that dwelt on the Earth." - Revelation 11:8-10.

The Devil's Poor Care of His Own

The Devil is therefore using these various officials and commissioners and boards, whether they realize it or not and in this they have been entrapped! This burial, therefore, gives for further separating or the "sheep" from the "goats". Many were the good people who saw and continue to see the viciousness of officials who would not permit the proper burial of the dead, and the hand of the Hierarchy behind the whole matter was freely discussed on the streets. On the other hand, others made their decision on the side of the entrenched religionist, and their portion is with the Devil. So, in reality, while these agencies were desperately striving to thwart a burial, it was not the fate of the bones which they decided, but their own destiny.

Nor is their blood on anyone's head, because they were told times that to fight against God or tamper with His servant's bones even, would bring upon them the condemnation of the Lord. They ignored such warnings and acted wickedly when a proper course would not have affected them in the least, "because it is in the power of their hand." - Micah 2:1.

So their responsibility is fixed, and they followed the course of Satan, who strove for the body, of Moses and tried to stop the resurrection of Jesus. (Jude 1:9; Matthew 27:62-64) How great is that burden may be gathered from the words which on one occasion were called to their attention: "See now that I, even I, am He, and there is no god with me: I kill, and I make alive; I wound and I heal: neither is there any that can deliver out of my hand." - Deuteronomy 32:39.

Among other things counsel for plaintiffs, Knorr, Heath and WATCHTOWER SOCIETY, fitly described the un-American and Fascist action of the defendants, officials, thus:

The officials have admitted that they would permit an ordinary man to be buried on this site or plot and that the burial would not disturb anyone, but they contend that because Judge Rutherford was not an ordinary man he cannot be buried as requested in California. The only thing that distinguished Judge Rutherford from the ordinary man was that he was a faithful servant and witness of Almighty God. If the time has come when a man cannot be buried in this state because he was a servant of the Lord, then it is high time for the courts, to take some action to protect those who dare to worship Jehovah God. The action of the defendants outrages the community and is a disgrace to the entire state. This court should protect the Planning Board and Board of Supervisors from the snare in which they find themselves, to wit fighting against Jehovah God in this matter, which brings everlasting death. We are entitled to the writ of mandate.

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

Judge Rutherford's Final Witness

At the conclusion of the hearing Judge Mundo did not decide the matter promptly, but stated that he would take two weeks to render his decision. He denied the writ of mandamus and refused to make the county officials do their duty under the law. The ruling of the judge approving the illegal conduct of the aforesaid county officials was contrary to a score or more Supreme Court of California decisions providing that burials were allowable in the county. He also ruled contrary to the Supreme Court of the United States and overruled the rights of those charged with the burial, contrary to the U. S. Constitution.

Very few persons give heed to the Word of the Lord, but rather, most persons follow their own counsel.

“Be wise now therefore, O ye kings: he instructed, ye judges of the earth. Serve the LORD with fear, and rejoice with trembling. Kiss the Son, lest he be angry, and ye perish from the way, when his wrath is kindled but a little. Blessed are all they that put their trust in him.” - Psalm 2:10-12.

After the judge's decision those handling the matter of burial decided that there was no use to appeal to higher courts of California, which would delay the burial one year. They decided to proceed with the burial immediately. The remains of J. F. Rutherford, accompanied by the mortician, Mr. Lewis, were then sent east, for interment at Watchtower, radio station WBBR, Staten Island, New York. Adjoining the Society's property there is a burial plot, and the remains of Judge Rutherford were interred alongside others of his brethren with whom he had fought a good fight against the Devil's organization for many years. Burial was made in the Society's plot at sunrise, Saturday, April 25, 1942.

This faithful servant of the Lord gave a grand witness to the honor of Jehovah's name and poured out his life in the interests of God's THEOCRATIC GOVERNMENT. All who knew him rejoiced in his zeal and their privilege of associating with a faithful servant of the Most High God, Jehovah. With his burial ends his last earthly witness to the praise of the Almighty God, Jehovah. [*Consolation, Volume 23, Number 592, May 27, 1942, Pages 1-16*]

THE NEW WORLD, 1942

The Lord Jesus has now come to the temple for judgment, and the remnant of the members of “his body” yet on earth he has gathered into the temple condition of perfect unity with himself (Malachi 3:1-3), and hence those faithful men of old may be expected back from the dead any day now. The Scriptures give good reason to believe that it shall be shortly before Armageddon breaks.

In this expectation the house at San Diego, California, which house has been much publicized with malicious intent by the religious enemy, was built, in 1930, and named “Beth-Sarim”, meaning “House of the Princes”. It is now held in trust for the occupancy of those princes on their return. The most recent facts show that the religionists of this doomed world are gnashing their teeth because of the testimony which that “House of the Princes” bears to the new world. To those religionists and their allies the return of those faithful men of old to ride with judgment over the people shall not bring any pleasure. But to the people whom the angels sang about, “men of good-will,” it shall be an occasion for unbounded jubilation, and they shall rally to the side of those princely representatives of the kingdom of heaven. Concerning the contrast between those goatish opposers and these sheep-like ones Jesus foretold, saying to the religionists: “There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth, when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets, in the kingdom of God, and you yourselves thrust out. And they shall come from the east, and from the west, and from the north, and from the south, and shall sit down in the kingdom of God.” - Luke 13:28, 29; Matthew 8:11, 12. [*The New World, 1942, Page 104, 105*]

JEHOVAH'S WITNESSES 1943 YEARBOOK

Built in 1929, at San Diego, California, the house named Beth-Sarim. has been the focal point of much enemy ridicule because it was deeded to Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, David, Jephthah, and other righteous men of old whom God has promised to make "princes" in His New World. Much publicity has been given

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

to Beth-Sarim, Society property, due to naming it Beth-Sarim, which means "house of the princes", in expectation of the resurrection of these faithful men of old to be "princes in all the earth".

It was at this home that Brother Rutherford, the former president of the WATCH TOWER BIBLE & TRACT SOCIETY, finished his earthly course of life, on January 8, 1942. Immediately thereafter considerable publicity was again given the home. It was the wish of the former president to be buried on this property, but the "city fathers", along with the religionists, put up a great howl. The details of the controversy will be found in Consolation No. 592.

The people of good-will in San Diego showed their desire to have Judge Rutherford's wishes complied with, by 14,693 of them signing a petition, but their desires were ignored. By the circulation of this petition a real witness was given in this territory for a period of months.

The brethren living at Beth-Sarim and on property adjoining thereto look after the interests of the Kingdom at that place. A course of study is conducted there similar to that at the Bethel home, under the direction of a competent instructor. Seven brethren that live there and take care of the property spend a great portion of their time in the field service, organizing study groups and caring for the people of good-will. [*Jehovah's Witnesses 1943 Yearbook (1942), Page 33, 34*]

WATCHTOWER, DECEMBER 1947

Tonight, however, came the one report that was especially awaited by all the convention, that of the Society's president, Brother Knorr, who took as his theme "All Nations Expansion". On his world-tour of 47,795 miles he had had his most blessed experience in Australia, where the Lord had used him to help the brethren to recover from the damaging course taken by many of them during World War II. The contrary but right course taken by their brethren to the north in the Philippine Islands resulted there in great numerical growth and showed the good effects of following God's Word rather than fallible men in the organization. Brother Knorr then discussed farms and refuge places which served no good purpose in the expansion work and which were accordingly being disposed of. This led logically to his referring to the Society's property at San Diego, California to wit, the house Beth-Sarim meaning "House of Princes". The audience, now grown to 32,107, applauded when informed that the Society's board of directors had voted unanimously to dispose of Beth-Sarim, either by outright sale or by rent, because it had fully served its purpose and was now only serving as a monument quite expensive to keep; our faith in the return of the men of old time whom the King Christ Jesus will make princes in ALL the earth (not merely in California) is based, not upon that house Beth-Sarim, but upon God's Word of promise. [*The Watchtower, December 15, 1947, Page 382*]

JW'S IN THE DIVINE PURPOSE, 1959

Thursday was an exciting day, the morning, afternoon and evening sessions being devoted to reports from Gilead missionaries. On this day, too, 3,381 persons were immersed. "Branch Day," which came Friday, was also a thrilling day of news of world-wide theocratic expansion.

THE TIME FOR THE PRINCES TO APPEAR

Then on Saturday, August 5, came stimulating and enlightening "Knowledge of God Day." The Society's president released simultaneously in English and Spanish the new book "This Means Everlasting Life." Also on this day the Society's vice-president delivered an epoch-making speech. It was called "New Systems of Things," and the conventioners present will never forget its effect on the audience. For many years it had been the view of The Watchtower that the faithful men of old who served God faithfully before Jesus' time would be raised from the dead even before Armageddon to join in organizing Jehovah's modern-day people and to share in shouldering the remnant's responsibility of representing the Lord Jesus Christ in the capacity of overseers of the flock of God on earth. These men were variously referred to as "ancient worthies," "faithful men of old," and "the princes" in the light of Psalm 45:16. Perhaps you'd like to read that, Lois.

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

"In place of your forefathers there will come to be your sons, whom you will appoint as princes in all the earth."

Thank you. Because of the understanding of this text that had prevailed for so long, many of Jehovah's witnesses expected at every convention to greet Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, David and the others, welcoming them back from the dead. You can imagine, then, the electrifying effect on the audience this statement of the speaker made:

Would this International assembly be happy to know that HERE, TONIGHT, in our midst, there are a number of prospective PRINCES OF THE NEW EARTH?

The convention Report describes the audience's reaction and answer to this question:

A tremendous and sustained clapping of hands and shouting for joy assured the speaker that nothing at the moment interested them more. A hushed and profound silence then settled over Yankee Stadium. Every ear strained in order not to lose a syllable as Brother Franz began a discussion of some very important facts concerning Psalm 45:16.

In this year, 1950, the speaker observed, there are hundreds of thousands of "other sheep" who are fully dedicated to Jehovah. These have gone farther in belief than Abel, Enoch, Noah, Abraham and Sarah, for those ancient people merely looked forward by faith to the coming Seed, Christ, but these "other sheep" of today have actually accepted Jesus as the Savior and King. Instead of pointing into the Indefinite future toward the Kingdom, these sheep now declare the Kingdom actually established.

Moreover, these modern witnesses have suffered just as much for their faith as Jehovah's witnesses of old. They have been killed, have gone about in animal skins, have been ill treated and have been forced to seek shelter in desert and mountain retreats. When Brother Franz noted that there was nothing that scripturally argues against Christ's making many of these "other sheep" "princes in all the earth" as required, thunderous applause again interrupted his momentous speech.

The speaker then explained that the word "prince" is translated from the Hebrew word sar and does not always designate a person of royal birth. In fact, he pointed out, "It means the first, foremost or chief in any class, the head of any company or group." The term "prince" would not be applied as a title therefore, but would merely designate an office of a "servant."

This interesting Point was also brought out: Back in 1904 the first president of the Watch Tower Society wrote the sixth volume of Scripture Studies, entitled "The New Creation". In chapter 3, entitled "The Call of the New Creation", he had this to say, at the top of page 157: "And we may be sure that any consecrating and performing a full sacrifice of themselves in the interest of the Lord's cause after the heavenly class is complete, will find that the Lord has plenty of blessings of some other kind still to give; and that all of his blessings are for such consecrators, self sacrificing. Possibly they may be counted in with the ancient worthies who had the sacrificing disposition that is pleasing to God, prior to the beginning of the 'high calling'.

Another reference years after that one was also quoted. It was in The Watch Tower in its issue of September 1, 1915. In an article on the "harvest work," paragraphs 5 and 6 (pages 268, 269) suggested that those dedicating themselves to God after the door to the heavenly class was closed, yet before the "inauguration of the restitution work," would be accepted "not to the spirit plane of being, but to the earthly plane. Such would come in under the same conditions as the ancient worthies who were accepted of God."

It was in this same talk at the Saturday evening session that the Society's vice president explained the relationship of the "new heavens" and "new earth" and pointed to them as a part of the "new systems of things." Then, in the conclusion of this memorable discourse, the speaker summarized this new and fuller appreciation of Jehovah's witnesses in the divine purpose:

With these transporting prospects so close before us, let us keep theocratic organization and let God continue improving it as a new world society. Never may we look back to this modern Sodom which is reserved for destruction; but we will keep faces forward in full faith. Onward, then, steadily, all of us together, as a new world society! [*Jehovah's Witnesses in the Divine Purpose, 1959, Pages 252, 253*]

LET YOUR NAME BE SANCTIFIED, 1961

Rutherford was abed on the Pacific Coast when the United States of America was plunged into World War II Sunday, December 7, 1941. Two men of the anointed remnant (one since 1913 and one since 1922) and one of the "other sheep" (since 1934) were summoned from Brooklyn headquarters out to

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

Rutherford's bedside at the home called "Beth-Sarim," San Diego, California. On December 24, 1941, he gave these three his final instructions. For years he had been hoping to see the faithful prophets, including Elijah and Elisha, resurrected from the dead and installed as Kingdom "princes in all the earth" in God's new world. (Psalm 45:16) But on Thursday, January 8, 1942, Rutherford died at seventy-two years of age, as a faithful witness of Jehovah God, completely devoted to the interests of God's kingdom. He had proved himself fearless in support of Jehovah's side of the paramount issue of Universal Domination. [*Let Your Name Be Sanctified*] (1961), Page 335]

JEHOVAH'S WITNESSES 1975 YEARBOOK

By November Brother Rutherford's critical illness had gained ground and he was compelled to have an operation at Elkhart, Indiana. Thereafter he expressed a desire to go to California. So he was taken to a San Diego residence known as "Beth-Sarim." For some time it was apparent to his associates and the best medical experts that he could not recover.

Briefly it may be said that Brother Rutherford had a severe case of pneumonia after his release from unjust imprisonment during 1918-1919 because of his faithfulness to Jehovah. Thereafter he had only one good lung. It was virtually impossible for him to remain in Brooklyn, New York, during the winter and still carry out his duties as the Society's president. In the 1920's he went to San Diego under a doctor's treatment. The climate there was exceptionally good and the doctor urged him to spend as much time as possible in San Diego. That is what Rutherford did ultimately.

In time, a direct contribution was made for the purpose of constructing a house in San Diego for Brother Rutherford's use. It was not built at the expense of the Watch Tower Society. Concerning this property, the 1939 book *Salvation* stated: "At San Diego, California, there is a small piece of land, on which, in the year 1929, there was built a house, which is called and known as Beth-Sarim."

Sister Hazel Burford was one of the nurses who cared for Brother Rutherford during his final illness at Beth-Sarim, where he was taken in November 1941. She tells us: "We had the interesting times, for he got to where he would sleep all day and then all night long he was busy with the Society's business and kept us on the move!" One morning about the middle of December three brothers, including Brother Knorr, arrived from Brooklyn. Sister Burford recalls: "They spent several days with him going over the annual report for the Yearbook and other organizational matters. After their departure, Brother Rutherford continued to weaken and, about three weeks later, on Thursday, January 8, 1942, he faithfully finished his earthly course and graduated into fuller service privileges in the courts of his heavenly Father!" Later that day the news was sent to the Brooklyn headquarters by long-distance telephone at 5:15 PM.

How was news of J. F. Rutherford's death received at Brooklyn Bethel? "I will never forget the day we learned of Brother Rutherford's passing," comments William A. Elrod. "The announcement was brief. There were no speeches." [*Jehovah's Witnesses, 1975 Yearbook (1974), Page 193, 194*]

BRIEF MENTIONS OF BETH-SARIM

The Golden Age, September 2, 1931, 800

Presents an offer for five issues of The Messenger Columbus convention report and Rutherford's booklet, *The Kingdom, the Hope of the World*. "In addition it carries an account of the much-talked-of house Beth-Sarim, and many splendid views of the place."

The Watchtower, February 1, 1933, 34

"Readers of The Watchtower will please note that Brother Rutherford is at Beth-Sarim, San Diego, during the winter. Mail sent to him for the next three or four months should be addressed as follows: J. F. Rutherford, 4440 Braeburn Road, Kensington Heights, San Diego, California."

The Watchtower, December 15, 1937, 370

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

"For the next five or six months the president's address will be 4440 Braeburn Road, Kensington Heights, San Diego, California."

The Watchtower, October 15, 1943, 317

"In February, 1942 "there was established at 'Bethell (Society's headquarters) in Brooklyn, at 'Watchtower' on Staten Island, New York, at the 'Kingdom Farm,' South Lansing, New York, and at 'Beth-Sarim,' San Diego, California, what was then called the 'Advanced Course in Theocratic Ministry."

The Watchtower, November 1, 1955, 655.

"Hazel O. Burford, nurse: "A week later I was privileged to accompany Brother Rutherford and his party to California, where we lived in Beth-Sarim, the 'House of the Princes,' for the next eight weeks until his death January 8, 1942."

The Watchtower, June 1, 1985, 27

Daniel Sydlik: "The passing years have been enriched by human relationships with dedicated and devout men who loved Jehovah more than life itself - men such as Judge Rutherford, whom I had the privilege to meet in his home in San Diego."

The Watchtower, March 1, 1992, 27

Sandra Cowan: "Often we preached near Beth-Sarim, which was where the ailing president of the Watch Tower Society, Brother Rutherford, had spent the winters before his death in 1942. We visited regularly and had dinner with the fulltime servants there."

NEWSPAPER ARTICLES MENTIONING BETH-SARIM

San Diego Union & San Diego Sun (Tribune-Sun)

March 15, 1930: 1, 3 San Diego Sun

"San Diego Mansion With All Modern Improvements—Awaits Earthly Return of Prophets"

January 9, 1931: 15 San Diego Sun

"David's House Waits For Owner-Bearded Tramp Only Claimant to Home for King"

January 10, 1942: B-7 San Diego Union "Deaths Funeral Announcements"

January 11, 1942: A-2 San Diego Union

"Judge Rutherford Succumbs; Led Jehovah's Witnesses"

January 12, 1942: A-2 San Diego Union

"Death of 'Witnesses' Leader Brings Burial Complications"

"Plea For Private Cemetery Delays Rutherford Funeral"

January 12, 1942: A-6 & A-21 Tribune-Sun

"Rutherford Burial Held Up; Cemetery Near Home Sought" (A-6)

"Residents Protest Rutherford Burial" (A-21)

January 13, 1942: B-10 San Diego Union

"Vault Permit Delays Burial Of Rutherford"

January 21, 1942: A-3 San Diego Union

"Many Protests On Rutherford Burial Received"

January 21, 1942: 12 Tribune-Sun

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

"Protests Filed By Rutherford Neighbors"

January 24, 1942: A-1, A-4 Tribune-sun

"Private Cemetery Arguments Futile"

"Hillside Grave Plea Rejected: Rutherford Problem Left to Supervisors"

January 25, 1942: A-2 San Diego Union

"County Planners Deny Rutherford Burial Plea"

January 27, 1942: B-1 San Diego Union

"Supervisors Delay Action On Rutherford Burial Plea"

February 3, 1942: B-1 San Diego Union

"Special Burial Permit Refused For Rutherford"

February 17, 1942: A-4 San Diego Union

"Court Decision on Rutherford Burial Awaited"

February 18, 1942: B-7 San Diego Union

"No Will Left By Rutherford, Says Secretary"

February 19, 1942: A-6 San Diego Union

"Rutherford Followers Plan New Partition"

March 5, 1942: A-15 Tribune-Sun

"Letters on Rutherford Burial Request Deluge Supervisors"

March 16, 1942: A-2 Tribune-Sun

"Grave Permit Up to Courts"

March 16, 1942: A-9 San Diego Union

"Planners Again Oppose Burial of Rutherford"

March 17, 1942: B-10 San Diego Union

"Court Action Indicated as Burial Denied"

March 20, 1942: A-17 San Diego Union

"Political, Religious Prejudice Charged in Burial Request"

April 4, 1942: B-10 San Diego Union

"Deewall Quizzed In Burial Case"

April 7, 1942: B-1 San Diego Union

"Boud Quizzed On Rutherford Burial Site"

April 9, 1942: B-3 San Diego Union

"Rutherford Case Decision Duel"

THE MESSENGER, SATURDAY, JULY 25, 1931

Beth - Sarim Much Talked About House in San Diego

The House of the Princes. Somebody Paid a Hundred Thousand Dollars for Advertising the Resurrection of the Old Testament Saints. But Not Us. Come Again, Reporters

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

"All men have not faith," and there is no use in expecting, men to exercise faith when they do not have it. At the present time there is only a handful of people in the world who really know that the Bible is the Word of God. Since the Bible is the Word of God, then we may depend upon it that it was especially written for us who are living, just now, when Satan's organization is slipping down into the abyss from which it will never arise.

God has a people in the earth at this time. These people are his people, and not the Devil's people. They look like other men but they are not the same. They are governed in what they do by the Word of God. Their desire to do God's will as they find it recorded in His Word is the all-consuming passion of their lives; it means more to them than all else in the world put together.

We know who the people of God are. They are, collectively God's "faithful and wise servant" in the earth at this time. Collectively this "servant" goes to make up the Watch Tower Bible & Tract Society. There is no other "servant." God does not have fifty-seven or even two different ways of doing his work in such an hour as this.

What the Back and the West Side Look Like. Do You Think David Will Like It?

It is the positive conviction of the "servant" that the Watch Tower Bible & Tract Society is being used and will be used by the Lord to proclaim God's name and Word and judgments in the earth and to help God's people, both those who are free and those who are in the Devil's cages, to grasp the blessings and to see the duties and privileges of the hour.

Judge Rutherford, president of the Watch Tower Society, is one of the hardest-worked men in the world. Anybody can be a Christian in peace-time, but Judge Rutherford was one of the wartime Christians; and, for daring so to be, went to Atlanta Penitentiary under four sentences of twenty years each.

When he emerged he was in poor physical condition, and even now has the use of but one lung. Since his return from Atlanta, prudence and good common sense dictated that, working as hard as he constantly works, he should have the benefit of the most equable winter climate to be found. It is a matter of common knowledge among meteorologists (weather experts) that San Diego, California, is as near perfection for a winter climate as it is possible to get. About a quarter of a million people besides meteorologists, have made the same discovery and make the city their winter home.

For years after he emerged from prison, Judge Rutherford went to San Diego to work during the winter months, renting such quarter as could be secured. His physician, Dr. A. G. Eckols, of San Diego, urged him to make the city his permanent winter home; and in the latter part of the year 1929 some brethren, out of their own personal funds, arranged for the erection of Beth-Sarim, "the house of the princes," of which several illustrations appear in this issue.

Before Judge Rutherford would accept and use the home, he insisted upon writing, the (iced that it shall forever be held in trust by the Watch Tower Bible & Tract Society for the use of the Lord's work in the Earth, with the expectation that in due time Abraham, Melchisedec Joseph, Moses, Joshua, David, Isaiah or some others of the patriarchs or prophets of olden times will appear and will be glad to use this home which has been prepared for one or more of them in the western edge of the new world.

The climate is the same as that of Palestine. The place is planted with date and palm trees, such as would be familiar and pleasing sights to these men. On the part of Judge Rutherford the dedication of this house to God's work and for the use of these men was, a simple act of faith. To a few newspaper men this exhibition of true faith in God and in his Word has seemed to give occasion for a little display of semi-mirthful incredulity; but for the most part the newspapers have treated the item with dignity, and the story of Beth-Sarim has gone around the world, conveying to millions of people the thought that shortly David and others will no doubt be awakened from the sleep of death.

Whatever the motive of the newspaper men, their action resulted in giving free world-wide publicity to a Bible truth, the resurrection on earth of the faithful Old Testament saints, publicity such as would have cost the Society thousands and thousands of dollars.

Another feature, an ominous one for those caught in Satan's toils, is that the "evil servant" class, instead of being glad to see the preparation for and the use of adequate equipment for doing the Lord's work, seem to have the spirit of Judas when he said, "Why was not this ointment sold and the proceeds given to the poor?"

The record shows that Judas cared nothing about the poor. What he really wanted was to get his hands on that money for himself. And the reason he wanted it for himself was not so that he could use it to the glory of God. His thought in the matter was wholly selfish, wholly indefensible. And the Judas' class are like Judas himself. They are all, of the same stripe. [The Messenger, July 25, 1931, Page 6]

Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses

THE MESSENGER, THURSDAY, JULY 30, 1931

Princess Bonnie

So many people have called up The Messenger office and wanted to know the identity of the little girl who had the privilege of interviewing Brother Rutherford and how she came to have such a privilege, that we give just a little explanation:

How could we know, when we published a picture of Judge Rutherford talking to a little girl that it was going to start a small sized revolution in the Nursery? And how could we know that a whole battalion of mothers would lie in wait for the Judge and try to ambush him into talking to their kiddies, too? It is something he likes to do, but he doesn't get much time for it.

There is a particular reason why Brother Rutherford was talking to that particular little girl. Here are the facts:

Brother and Sister Balko are in charge of Beth-Sarim. They spend all their spare time in the service work in and about San Diego, both being fully devoted to the Lord, and therefore are Jehovah's witnesses. They have two children, a little girl now nearly two years old, and a little boy about six months. Beth-Sarim being "the house of the princes," and, as we confidently expect to be occupied and used by some of the princes in the earth, it seemed quite appropriate that these children who are growing up there should be named in harmony with these scriptures. Hence the little girl is named Princess Bonnie Balko, and the little boy Prince Joseph Barak Balko. We know from the scriptures that both Joseph and Barak will be among the princes, and since there are some women also mentioned amongst these faithful ones it is hoped that these two little ones may grow up at Beth-Sarim to be with the rulers of the earth and live forever to the glory of Jehovah's name.

The have been told, in so far as they can understand, that they may expect these noble men and, when they do appear, to meet them and put themselves completely under their direction. It might be that this little prince and princess would be stenographers or office children or clerks about the place or performing some other duty that will be necessary in the Kingdom. Everything will then be done in order and there will be plenty for every one to do. Little Princess Bonnie was listening to some kind words of good cheer when the front-page picture of our issue of July 29 was taken. [**The Messenger, July 30, 1931, Page 2**]

www.MaranathaMedia.com.au